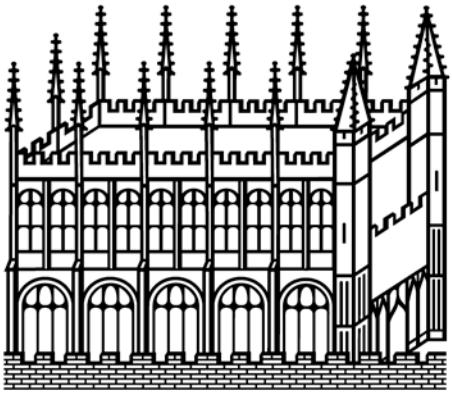


Bodleian Libraries

UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

This book is part of the collection held by the Bodleian Libraries and scanned by Google, Inc. for the Google Books Library Project.

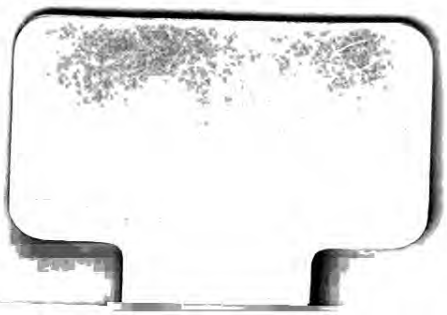
For more information see:

http://www.bodleian.ox.ac.uk/dbooks

This work is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-NonCommercial-ShareAlike 2.0 UK: England & Wales (CC BY-NC-SA 2.0) licence.

31.
266.

500.1 r 42



SIR EDWARD SEAWARD'S NARRATIVE

OF HIS SHIPWRECK,

AND CONSEQUENT

DISCOVERY OF CERTAIN ISLANDS IN THE CARIBBEAN SEA:

WITH A DETAIL OF

MANY EXTRAORDINARY AND HIGHLY INTERESTING EVENTS IN HIS LIFE,

FROM THE YEAR 1733 TO 1749,

AS WRITTEN IN HIS OWN DIARY.

EDITED BY MISS JANE PORTER.

BIBLIOTHECA BODLEIANA

IN THREE VOLUMES. — VOL. III.

LONDON:

LONGMAN, REES, ORME, BROWN, AND GREEN,

PATERNOSTER-ROW.

1831.

266.

LONDON:
Printed by A. & R. Spottiswoode,
New-Street-Square.

CONTENTS OF VOL. III.

CHAPTER I.

Reception of the Porghee and sloop of war on entering the island harbour. — Diego's *exposé* on the state of the settlement. — Rota's account to her lady of affairs during her absence. — The two old negroes' desire of distinction. — Adjutant-General Craig, and his army of *three*. — Visits of ceremony between the governor of the islands and the captain of the Shark sloop of war. — A great dinner at Peccary Field House. — Drake and Otway make a survey of the islands. — Seaward and his lady visit the Germans. — His fine speech to them — how much of it they understood. — Military muster, and a great feast to the people. — Sir Edward's commission read to them. — The captain of the Shark's reflections on what he witnessed. — He and his sloop depart Page 1

CHAP. II.

Affairs of the settlement. — Mr. Seaward sails for Jamaica. — The German colony. — Plan for educating the children. — Dr. Gordon. — Buildings projected. — Gordon's choice of a site for his house. — Plan for cutting a pass between German Town and Peccary Field. — A Dutch galliot arrives — ill consequences among the Germans. — The Porghee fitted as a vessel of war. — Drake sails for the Mosquito shore. — Returns with Indian chiefs, asses, and mules —

sails for Jamaica with the chiefs. — Small-pox appears in the settlement — method of treating it. — The Porghee returns, bringing deer and turkeys from the Mosquito shore. — A fête champêtre at the Cocoa-nut Grove - - Page 26

CHAP. III.

Three vessels arrive. — Sir Edward Seaward ordered to Porto Bello — goes in the Porghee, accompanied by a king's cutter — touch at St. Andero — arrive at Porto Bello — conduct of the Spanish governor. — Important information received on board the English vessels. — Sail from Porto Bello — attack a tower, and rescue certain prisoners. — Van Kempen. — Return to Seaward Islands. — Sir Edward broods over the occurrences at Porto Bello. — Van Kempen's commercial projects. — Concise view of the state of the colony. — Captain Drake and Maria Seaward — their marriage. — Reception of the Porto Bello affair in England. — Sir Edward and Lady Seaward take a cruise to Jamaica, St. Domingo, and Curaçoa. — Dutch governor's dinner and ball. — Return to Seaward Islands. — Produce, manufactures, commerce, and prosperity. — Reflections on the rise and progress of the settlement. — Christmas-day — pastimes, &c. - - 61

CHAP. IV.

Emigrants from Carolina. — A Spanish *guarda costa* enters the harbour. — Military display at Fort George. — Spaniards' magnificent present to Captain Drake. — Sir Edward and Lady Seaward's travelling *progress* throughout the two islands. — Rainy season. — Harvest. — Happy leisure at the Plantation House 110

CHAP. V.

A sloop of war from Jamaica. — Sir Edward Seaward to go to Porto Bello with apologies from the British government — his indignation. — Lady Seaward insists on accompanying him — sail in consort with the sloop of war. — Mission to Carthagena — reconnoitre the coast — make Porto Bello — difficulties before entering the harbour — Sir Edward Seaward's and Captain Knight's reception — altercation with the Spanish governor — their arrest and confinement — Lady Seaward makes her way to the prison. — Various interesting events and perilous adventures, till the party are rescued by the taking of Porto Bello by the British Admiral Vernon. — Sir Edward Seaward's interview with the Admiral. — The Spanish governor's apology. — Sir Edward's gratitude to his liberator. — Return to Seaward Islands — the people coming out in boats to meet their governor - - Page 132

CHAP. VI.

He and his Eliza restored to their happy island home. — Much colonial business. — Sir Edward and Lady Seaward fall sick. — Dr. Gordon's medical skill. — Recovery. — New settlers. — A superb dinner at the governor's mansion. — The Porghee returns from Porto Bello. — Dreadful storm. — A strange vessel on the reef — the captain declares himself to be a Kingston privateer. — Drake sails for Jamaica. — Captain of the wrecked vessel discovered to be a pirate — battle between his crew and the Seaward people — captain and crew taken prisoners. — Subsequent measures for general safety, &c. - 165

CHAP. VII.

Van Kempen's voyage to Porto Bello. — An officer of engineers arrives in the Porghee — he visits the different fort-positions in the islands. — Useful suggestions. — He sails with Drake to join Admiral Vernon. — Sir Edward puts the engineer's suggestions into practice. — Guns brought. — Fortifications erected. — Fate of the pirate captain and his crew. — Various interesting occurrences. — Trading expedition to Honduras. — The first keel laid down on the islands. — A fine fountain made. — Anniversary of the King's birthday. — A bag of emeralds. Freeing a bondman. — Rainy season, &c. Page 203

CHAP. VIII.

The Porghee and merchant vessels put to sea. — John Reynolds — his history. — Vernon and Wentworth at Carthagena. — Seaward Islands threatened by the Spaniards. — Privateers rendezvous at the islands — the consequences. — First year of jubilee in the islands. — Several negroes receive freedom 239

CHAP. IX.

The Sea Horse frigate arrives — Captain Limeburner, its commander — his hospitable reception by Sir Edward Seaward and Captain Drake. — Congregation under the great silk-cotton-tree. — The Sea Horse and Porghee sail for the Spanish main. — Woodland region cleared for extending the village. — Porghee returns. — Drake's account of the Island of Rattan. — Letter from Lord Harrington 250

CHAP. X.

A squadron of Spanish men-of-war off the islands. — Preparations for the expected attack. — Lady Seaward's feminine heroism.—The enemy's boats attempt a landing — repulsed by the Porghee and Avon. — The frigates try to enter the harbour.—Action within the harbour — attack on the land. — The Spaniards beaten — prisoners. — Spanish commander, his bravery. — Noble conduct of Sir Edward. — A flag of truce arrives, and takes away the Spanish prisoners
Page 265

CHAP. XI.

Joy at the settlement on the final departure of the Spaniards. — Build a church in the village. — Colony in great prosperity. — Approach of the stormy season. — A Spanish fleet suddenly surrounds the islands — Sir Edward and Drake reconnoitre it. — General consternation. — A fast is held for deliverance. — The tempest. — Wrecks of the Spanish ships of war. — Despatches from Jamaica. — Several families arrive from England. — Sickness in Seaward Islands. — Deaths. — Lady Seaward recovers slowly. — Christmas-day, at the new church
306

CHAP. XII.

Sir Edward thinks of returning to England. — Settles his accounts with the authorities, and people of his islands. — He and his lady visit all the settlements therein. — Their generous conduct. — Sir Edward's final arrangements with Drake — gives him a commission as Lieutenant-Governor of Seaward Islands. — Farewell dinner at the mansion. — Sir Edward and Lady Seaward take leave of the people. — Embark

on board the Porghee for Jamaica. — Lady Seaward's pathetic expression on taking her last look of the "shadowy land."— Make the island of Jamaica. — Takes a passage in the Severn, for Bristol. — Sails. — The Gulf of Florida. — Cape Canoveral - - - - Page 321

CHAP. XIII.

Dialogue between Sir Edward Seaward and the Duke of Newcastle, about surrendering Seaward Islands to the Crown of Spain. — A visit from the Earl of Harrington. — George II.'s declaration on the subject. — Seaward stipulates for conditions. — A commissioner sent out from the minister and Sir Edward, to Seaward Islands, to put the measure into execution. — Sir Edward Seaward's feelings on the occasion. — His amiable wife, still his comforter under all circumstances, soothes his regrets, and proposes "to return to Hartland, and finish their days in peace" - - - 336

SIR EDWARD SEAWARD'S NARRATIVE.

CHAPTER I.

JUNE, 1737.

"THIS, then, is the scene of your *shipwreck* and *providential deliverance*, Sir Edward," said Mr. Rowley. "On the other side of the islands, my dear friend," I replied: "I will show it you in a day or two." Our vessel at this moment was in stays, having to make a tack on rounding the southern extremity of the reef, which we had called The Dragon, to weather a small high rocky islet, between which and St. George's Island is the main channel. In doing this, we were closely followed by The Shark, reaching over to the shore where the Germans had been located. On our approach, they all came down to the beach—men, women, and children; accompanied by our four carpenters, and their negro apprentices. This animated body gave us a noisy hurrah; which the brig, as well as ourselves, returned with a hearty cheer. The carpenters, who, I afterwards learnt, had gone every morning in the Avon to assist these new comers, now hastened back into the boat, and made sail after us. I was glad to see all this: it gave an appearance of life to the

strangers I brought with me; who, perhaps, expected to see little else than barren rocks, and a few meagre-looking inhabitants. But Drake had taken care that something more than this should excite our attention. He had intimated to Corporal Craig, that it would be proper to salute me with thirteen guns from the battery, whenever I should arrive: and when he called on Captain Townshend at Port Royal, he told him of the compliment that would be paid on our entering the harbour, expressing his hope that The Shark would return it. I knew nothing of this; and therefore was surprised when, as soon as we fairly came in, and had a full view of our mansion and the fort, I perceived the first gun fire. "What does that mean, Drake?" asked I. "A salute, Sir Edward," he replied. Then the second gun — "I hope they may not hurt themselves!" said my dear wife. The parson and Maria looked a little afraid. Craig fired his first ten guns, in very good time; but when he had to reload, he made rather slow work of it: however, he finished his salute; and the brig took it up, returning the thirteen guns in good regular time, although he too had but ten guns. When The Shark had done, we answered with three cheers, and then prepared to anchor.

At the close of the salute, Diego made his appearance in the six-oared boat, with his men neatly equipped in white frocks and trowsers, and straw hats; he himself sitting in the cockswain's box, dressed in nankeen: the men rowing a good stroke, the old fellow steering with great judgment. This to me was the most pleasing part of the exhibition.

My dear wife, as well as myself, rejoiced to discern our old faithful servant again, while he was yet at a distance; and to see how well he had fulfilled my instructions, to perfect the negroes in rowing that boat.

I had put on my uniform, ready for landing; and as the Porghee let go her anchor, Diego's boat rowed up alongside; we all soon got in, not forgetting Fidele, our former, and once, only companion on these then lonesome shores. This idea crossed my mind at the time; and as if to give more force to it, Diego landed us on the very spot where he and his friends first stepped on shore from their canoe. Our brother and sister were on the beach to receive us; and close behind them our people stood in groups. The sun was then just setting, so that his last rays shone full upon them, and, perhaps, added to the look of gladness that brightened every brow. The greeting was hearty, but tumultuous: we could scarcely exchange caresses with our relatives; some of the people kissing our hands, or embracing our knees; Rota, and Mira, and Anne, hanging upon their mistress, shedding tears of joy. As we were walking up the side of the dell towards the mansion, we encountered Doctor and Mrs. Gordon, with whom we shook hands, inviting them to accompany us. Corporal Craig touched his hat as I passed him; and two sentinels, that he had placed before the door, presented arms. All this was seen from The Shark; which made a favourable impression on its captain and crew, as to the state of our infant settlement, and the feeling that subsisted between me and the people.

I was much pleased with the complete manner in which the mansion had been enlarged, and finished. A piazza had been affixed all round, and the whole was handsomely painted. Our vigilant and attentive Rota had laid out the table for coffee, on hearing of our approach; and we were delighted to see every thing in its place, ready for our reception.

Thursday, 30th.—My dear wife and myself recommenced our early habits. We were up before the sun: Diego was already in waiting; and dear old Rota and Anne were come into the hall. My sister Maria and Rosalie were called; and, as soon as dressed, my dear Eliza took them, followed by Anne, to the bath below the rocks; and there initiated them in the most delightful and healthful of all practices in a tropical climate.

When they had departed, Diego commenced what would be called in the House of Commons, "a clear and luminous *exposé* on the state and condition of the settlement." He complimented me on the honour King George had bestowed on me; which he had heard, and which he believed, by seeing a king's ship come with us. He heard say, too, now, that Captain Drake was made a king's captain! And he felt that all this should make himself something, though he did not know what; but he hoped I was pleased with his boat, and with the men, and with himself! "I am well pleased with your boat, and with your men, and with yourself, Diego," I replied; "and you shall be called the "*Governor's Cockswain.*" — "Thank you, sir," answered Diego; "but it is very long

and hard name: though it sound very grand, every people won't speak it all." — "Well, then, if any one would call you Diego, it shall for the future be *Don* Diego, or *Master* Diego, which ever you like best." — "*Master* Diego, Governor Sir, if you please," he replied; "for if Spaniards come here, they will all only laugh to hear black man called *Don* Diego." — "It shall be as you please," returned I. He then proceeded to state all that had been done in the settlement, since my departure this time twelvemonth. His detail, in general, was highly satisfactory; and it is wonderful, without we recur to a unity of spirit as a bond of peace, how so many months could pass away, and so much be effected, without murmurings, or thefts, or immoralities of any kind, as far as he could discover. Some of the people had been sick, but none had died; and the births, altogether, had been seven, although, till now, we had not heard of any but our nephew, and Purdy's bouncing boy. "You remember, sir," said he, "that you apprenticed Peter and Paul to the two Allwoods; and Matthew and Mark, to Xavier and to Derrick the carpenters; and Luke, to Hart the bricklayer. You gave two of my patriarchs, as you used to call them, Jacob and David, to turn the ground for your brother; and you gave him Felix for a servant. I have in the boat the four last new negro men, Patrick, Dennis, Murphy, and Darby; and also one that came before them, called John; and having Noah and Abel to choose between, out of our first people, to make six, I took Noah into the boat, and Abel is left to look after the stock, and keep the grounds

in order. The soldiers behave very well, sir," continued he; "and the sawyers cut up great many fine plank, sir: but I do not know what my master the Governor will do with all them German people: they don't know any thing, only make stockings; and if somebody want shoes, perhaps they never want stockings, only for great gentlemen or ladies; and one German woman can make more than every body here will use." Diego finished, and I thanked him as he deserved: but he had not done until the bathers returned. For I have done but little justice to his speech, it having been five times as long as I have made it, though, perhaps, not five times more comprehensive.

"*Master* Diego, my lady," said Rota (just beginning a speech to my dear wife as she entered), being more full of exultation, than her mistress was when she first spoke of her husband as Sir Edward! "*Master* Diego, my lady," repeated she, "has just been telling Master Governor, all the men have done since he went away; and he made very fine bows, and said fine sayings about King George. And Master Sir Edward Governor, commended him, and said '*Master* Diego.' I can't say any thing; but I love my lady, and I hope my lady pleased with her servant." My dear Eliza took her by the hand, saying, "You are my faithful Rota." — "Thank my lady," replied Rota: "but will my lady let Rota be called *Mistress* Rota?" Yes, you shall be called *Mistress* Rota; I will do any thing agreeable to you," returned my wife. Rota stood without reply. "*Mistress* Rota!" exclaimed Diego, "why do you not curtsey to kind

lady, and thank her?"—"I am so full heart, *Master* Diego," she replied; "but our kind lady will forgive me." Mistress Rota now entered into a detail as to the employment she had given to Anne, Martha, Clara, Hebe, Rose, and Lilly, the young negro women entrusted to her care, and under her direction during our absence. She then reminded her lady, that she had sent Mary, Delia, Phœbe, Pink, and Daisy, to Peccary Field, to be servants to her sister; adding that Hachinta also, was there with her son, the first born in the island; while her own daughter Mira, her lady Señora's first maid, was still at her mother's; but now hoped, as she was in the family way, that Master Governor would give Jack Martin, her husband, a house to themselves. And having with this request finished her speech, Mistress Rota retired to get breakfast.

Master Diego waited for orders. "Your boat will be wanted," said I, "within an hour, for me to go on board the king's ship." He made a bow, worthy of *Mr. Nash*, saying, — "It shall be ready to attend your honour," and departed. As Diego was stepping out from the Piazza, Drake came up to the house. "Diego," cried Drake, "I want to speak to you." — "*Master* Diego, sir, if you please, Captain Drake!" I heard this, and could not help smiling. All Spaniards are great sticklers for title; but for fear Drake might be offended at poor Diego's reply, I called out, — "We have just promoted him." My good-humoured and excellent friend instantly comprehended the matter, and answered, — "*Master* Diego, I beg pardon,

I wish to have the pleasure of speaking a word with you." — "The pleasure to me, Captain Drake," replied Diego, taking off his hat almost to the ground, which he had just put on; "you my captain, I only master to you, — the Governor cockswain, sir." Drake laughed, and I could scarcely keep my gravity. "Why you laugh at me, captain?" said Diego, more angrily than I ever before had seen him. "I laugh," replied Drake, smiling, "because you tell me you are only my master." — "Well!" returned Diego, "what that? did I not say you my captain? You give me captain, I give you master; you then have boat, and I have schooner." I now thought it right to interpose, and explain to Diego, that he had misapplied the term master, and thereby had signified to Captain Drake that he was servant to him. "O, then," cried Diego, "I beg my good captain's pardon; he must think Master Diego fool so to speak, and might well laugh at him." The ladies who stood by were much amused with this dialogue, and began to joke Drake on the rencontre. "Very true," said he, "I must mind what I am about. I was told by one without, he was my master; I do not require to be told by any one within, that I have met my mistress;" bowing at the same time gracefully and respectively to Maria, who blushed and turned away. This was mere badinage, if a tender sentiment had no share in it; but such being the case, Drake looked serious, and considered it a public avowal; but every one laughed, not having yet recovered from the effect of the scene between Drake and his master.

At eight o'clock the colours were hoisted, being the time observed for this ceremony at Jamaica; and at the same moment Corporal Craig planted the sentinels. His whole regular force being only three men, he required great talents as an adjutant-general to dispose of them to the best advantage. This difficult arrangement, however, was rendered easy by simplification. — One man before the mansion; two always in the plank-house for relief, where they were to keep covert, and eat, drink, and sleep, during the stay of The Shark.

After breakfast, I was about to go on board to pay my respects to Captain Townshend, in return for the visit I had received from him at Port Royal, and I sent Drake forward to inform him of my intention; but he begged I might not do so, until after he had waited upon me on shore; saying that such proceeding was due to my situation, and that any other would lower the Governor of Seaward Islands in the eyes of his ship's company. This conduct on his part, was noble and considerate; and in about an hour after he came on shore, where he was received with all the honour our slight means enabled us to bestow; a salute of cannon excepted, to which he was not entitled: but on my returning the visit, he saluted me with thirteen guns, which Drake and Craig's brigade contrived to answer very respectably from the fort.

My brother provided a handsome dinner for us to-day at Peccary Field; to which the captain of the sloop of war, his officers, and Mr. Otway, the gentleman sent to survey the islands, were invited,

besides Captain Drake, the Reverend Mr. Rowley, his wife, and ourselves. Doctor Gordon and his spouse, being yet inmates with my brother, were also of the party. Three turtle were now sent from the craal to The Shark, as a present to the ship's company, together with an abundant supply of pumpkins and melons; which were produced every where on the island in great abundance.

Mr. Dilkes was now ordered to land all the household goods from the schooner, and in our absence to place them as directed by Mistress Rota: Derrick, with his apprentice, having received instructions not to go to German Town today, but to remain to put up the bedsteads, and do such other things as might require the hand of a carpenter.

We left Rosalie to take care of Mr. Rowley's children, and Fidele to bear them company. Drake took a seat with us in the boat, and complimented Master Diego on the appearance of his boat's crew. The Shark's boat put off from the ship soon after we put off from the shore, laying on their oars till we came abreast of them: there were three officers and a midshipman with Captain Townshend. He said,—"Show us the way!" Master Diego was very proud to lead; but he was not insensible of the inferiority of his men, as rowers, to the sailors in the boat astern. Every now and then he would say,—"Look to white sailors, men! Long pull —you Murphy, feather your oar, sir!—Quite shamed of some of you!" Then he finished, by saying,—"Beg Master Governor's pardon, for talking to the people before him; but if king's captain

will make his boat row for pattern sometimes, Master Diego will talk to his men then." — "You shall have the king's boat for a pattern," I replied; "your men do better than I could have expected, and I am sure they will now soon perfect themselves."

Our friends met us on the beach at Peccary Field, and we all walked up together. The strangers admired the place much, and the beautiful prospect from it, which the surrounding shores, a fine sheet of water, and the view of the noble promontory, presented. On going up to the house, we came upon the ground where my dear Eliza and myself, with our faithful little dog, had fought the Peccaries; and I seized on the occasion, to tell them the story on the spot. The eyes of all the officers were instantly rivetted on my Eliza, to whom Captain Townshend paid a handsome compliment on her true heart. On our arrival at the house, the young stranger, my nephew, was presented to our notice; and soon after, the Reverend Mr. Rowley proceeded to the offices of baptism. The child was named James, and every thing proper was done on the occasion.

My brother had not neglected to add many things of convenience, and even elegance, to his residence during my absence; and I was agreeably surprised by these demonstrations of taste and wealth. We sat down fourteen to a well-covered table, at which Felix acted as butler, and four of the women, neatly dressed, attended. He gave us good wine and excellent punch; and by help of a present of fruit from Jamaica, a handsome dessert

crowned the feast. Xavier had been detained from going to work at German Town to-day; he and Hachinta being ordered to regale the boat's crew of The Shark, as also Master Diego and his men, with dinner, and coffee and cigars.

About nine o'clock we all returned home, well pleased with our entertainment; and Captain Townshend said, he was very glad to find his men all sober. I assured him they never should be otherwise during their stay here; but that his whole ship's company should have fish or turtle, and such fruit and vegetables as the islands produced, every day sent to them. It had been arranged after dinner, for Messrs. Otway and Drake to set out on the morrow, in the Avon, to prosecute their survey; and, of course, preparations were to be made early in the morning for their departure.

About ten o'clock of the day the surveying party set sail, taking a midshipman and four sailors from The Shark, besides two sailor lads, John Stone and Harry Rock. The mansion not being yet quite in order to give a great dinner, I proposed to Captain Townshend to accompany me to-day in the schooner to visit the Germans; and, in truth, my Eliza was extremely anxious to see them, on account of her promise to the Queen. She therefore was rejoiced to go; leaving Rosalie to superintend the unpacking of plate, and china, and so forth, and Mistress Rota to get a comfortable dinner for our guests.

Diego and his crew were taken on board the Porghee, in addition to the four men belonging to the vessel. We were soon under weigh; and as

the harbour with its two extremes stretched north and south, — George's Island laying on the east, and Edward's Island on the west, — we sailed with a flowing sheet to the German settlement between them, and in less than an hour anchored in a little bay to the southward of the place. As soon as the schooner was anchored, we went to shore in our boat, and were met on the beach by all the people. They stood nearly in a row, at a short distance from the spot where the boat landed; but the eight carpenters, who had gone over in the morning in canoes, had come down before the boat touched the shore, and hauled her bow well up out of the water. Having, therefore, stepped out easily on the sand, we walked up to the people, my dear wife being under my arm.

I instantly commenced a fine speech to them, in which I promised them my protection, frequently alluding to the interest her Majesty took in their welfare; and, occasionally pointing to Lady Seaward, told them they would find a valuable friend here, not only because they "were wanderers and without a home," (using her own words to me when pleading their cause!) but because they were the country-people of our most gracious Queen. I had become quite animated, and even eloquent, and had hoped to have excited a lively and sensible joy among them by my oratory; but, to my great disappointment, they all looked grave, and uneasy, and discontented: a momentary silence ensued, followed by a murmur. Soon after, two of the men stepped a little forward, and said a few words in German. "What can this mean?" said I to the carpenters, who stood behind me.

"They don't know any word Massa Governor have spoke to them: they very ignorant people, sir," replied Allwood. I looked at Captain Townshend, who could not help smiling. "Your fine speech," said he, "has been thrown away." — "Yes," responded my dear Eliza, "and I am much disappointed at their knowing nothing of English; the more so, because no one among us can speak German. It will be a great drawback," continued she, "on their comforts, during the separation which this ignorance on both sides may occasion:" then turning round to Allwood, as she continued to speak; "but we have no more right to despise these poor people for not knowing English, than they have to despise you, Mr. Allwood, for not speaking German." — "Lady Ma'am," replied the carpenter, "you never saw fellows handle a piece of wood like them; and then they call a tree a *boom*, and every one of us *zimmerman**, as if we had but one name among us." My dear Eliza smiled, and Captain Townshend and myself could not help laughing at Allwood's criterion of talent.

There was now a pause, when my dear wife whispered to me,—"Perhaps some of them may understand French: do you think you would venture to ask the question?" "Captain Townshend," said I, "do you speak French?" "*Pas beaucoup*," he replied, "and so badly that I cannot venture to attempt it."—"I am sorry for that," was my answer, "as I am but a novice myself, and if I were to attempt it, I certainly should blunder." — "I speak

* It may not be impertinent to observe, that *baum* is German for a *tree*, and *zimmerman* signifies *carpenter*. This is a key to Mr. Allwood's wonderment. — E.

more imperfectly than you do, my honoured husband," rejoined my Eliza; "yet let us walk among them, and I will try to address the women." I obeyed her wish, and as we passed along they made their obeisance to us. The women and children were together at the further end of the line, some of whom were pretty in spite of their national dress; but there was one among them, whose air, and manner, and apparel, differed somewhat from the rest. She caught my wife's eye in a moment, and advanced a step. "Parlez-vous François?" said my Eliza, at the same time taking the woman by the hand to assure her. "Oui, madame," she replied; "moi-même, je suis de Tionville, sur la Moselle; quoique mon mari, soit Allemand."—"C'est la même chose!" said my dear wife; "je me suis bien content, vous à trouver parmi les autres;" and then she proceeded to desire the woman to tell them, that the Governor would afford every protection and comfort in his power; also, that the Queen of England had recommended them to her special care; and that she would lose no opportunity of doing them a kindness, so long as they conducted themselves well. As the woman of French Flanders turned the French into German, the other women shouted, and the men showed some sullen signs of dubious satisfaction; and that is all that can be said of them. Captain Townshend and myself now took our turn to put questions to the interpreter; but he quickly discovered himself to be the only tolerable French scholar among us. "How are they off for tobacco?" asked Captain Townshend. "They have not any," answered she. "Tell

them," said I, "that I will send them some." She did so; and the moment they heard it, joy seemed to take possession of the men, transforming them instantly into beings of a social aspect; the fact was, they wanted tobacco, and were therefore miserable.

We now proceeded to visit their cabins; which occupied nearly a mile of a fine fertile slope, each having a distance between of nearly a hundred and fifty yards from its neighbours. Eight of the cabins were fully built, and the other four in great forwardness. Each cabin consisted of two apartments; which were sufficiently neat and clean, in the finished habitations, and furnished with wooden bowls and coarse crockery, and a few cooking utensils. My dear wife kept the Flanders woman close to her: and now, by the assistance of Captain Townshend, various questions were put as we proceeded from place to place. They had received the Queen's bounty, viz. ten dollars and a suit of clothes to each person, just before embarking at Port Royal, so that they had spent but a small portion of their money. After satisfying ourselves as well as we could as to their feelings and their wants, we took leave of them, commending their industry, and renewing the promise of some tobacco to-morrow, with which both men and women were well satisfied.

Jack Martin had taken upon himself the office of cook on board our little vessel, and had provided a good fish and a boiled fowl for our dinner; to which we sat down upon deck with the awning spread, while the schooner lay at anchor. Dinner,

or any other repast, taken under shade in the open air, is always agreeable; and we certainly had a practical proof of the truth of this observation to-day, for we enjoyed our scrambling meal infinitely more than we did our dinner yesterday, when we ate and drank with every conveniency, not to say elegance of accommodation. Our naval guest seemed to have imbibed a new life by this excursion: he hitherto had been reserved in conversation, but now he talked freely on every subject; not sparing his uncle, Sir Robert Walpole, for his backwardness in giving the *Dons* a "good licking," as he expressed it; which, he contended, they for a long time had justly merited. But it was now our turn to be a little reserved, when *the minister* became the subject of conversation, whom, although he might choose to blame, it was not likely he should take pleasure in hearing him censured by others. I should have liked, however, to smoke a cigar, by way of dessert, on the deck; but my ever-considerate Eliza dissuaded me from doing so, saying, that "the poor Germans might see the smoke, which would make them the more uneasy for the want of their tobacco." About five o'clock we got under weigh, and coasting along close to the shore of Edward's Island, by Long Bay, had a sight of our sheep; which had increased to a pretty flock. After this we stood for the anchorage, and landed a little before sunset. My sister and our guests, with their two little daughters, followed by Rosalie with Fidele, came down to meet us; and we all returned together, accompanied by Captain Townshend, to coffee.

I had forgot that to-morrow would be Saturday, and muster-day, until reminded of it by Diego. "Do the Germans come over?" said I. "Yes, sir," he replied; "they row themselves over in their own boat every Saturday, and after muster take back the week's allowance." — "That is well," I replied; "but on this occasion you must give two pounds of tobacco to each man. And now, Master Diego," continued I, "one of the sheep brought from Jamaica must be killed to-night, also a couple of large turtle; and desire some of your men to make a torch fishing. Let Mistress Rota have a fore quarter of the sheep, and the calapee and fins of one of the turtle, and provide her with a couple or three fine groopers from the fish-pots; then see that the hind quarter of the sheep is sent on board the Shark to the Captain, with my compliments; and let the other half, and the remainder of the turtle, and a sufficiency of mullet, with plenty of yams, be dressed, for all the men to dine under the shade of the promontory near the spring, when muster is over; and you must find cooks among the women. But don't forget," added I, "to send turtle every night, or early every morning, on board the king's vessel; and if you can furnish them with one hundred mullet daily, without depriving our people of their proper complement of fish, do so." After my conference with Diego was over, I joined our friends at coffee, and told Captain Townshend, that my black cockswain, Don Diego, had reminded me that to-morrow would be our muster-day. I then promised our guest, he should see the *Train-band*, exercise and fire; re-

questing the pleasure of his company, and that of his officers, to dinner, after it was over; which invitation he politely accepted, soon after taking his leave.

My brother had been at the mansion in our absence this morning, but not finding me at home had returned. Having now made up my mind for the events of to-morrow, I sent a canoe immediately, with a note to him, and another to Doctor and Mrs. Gordon, to invite them to the parade and to dinner. My dear wife and myself then consulted on further measures, among which, Mrs. Allwood was to be put in requisition for Guinea fowl. Matters being thus arranged, Rota was sent for, and closetted with her mistress, where she received her instructions in detail as to the dinner.

We were all astir at the cotton-tree plantation before daylight, and great preparations going on, both without and within the mansion. At eight o'clock Diego sounded the bugle; and before ten, the boats had arrived from Allwoods, and from German Town and Peccary Field, and the schooner's crew were already on shore. By eleven o'clock, the men had put on their regimentals and accoutrements, and were under arms at the Fort, to the number of forty; besides my brother, who was their captain; and Mr. Dilkes, their ensign; and Corporal Craig, with his regulars of three, who constituted the non-commissioned officers to the body: Drake, who was their lieutenant, was absent. Captain Townshend, with some of his officers, favoured us with their company on the ground; and all our other friends were present.

The men acquitted themselves very well, all things considered: after which they were marched to the isthmus; where they fired six rounds of ball each, at a target, with tolerable effect: they were then paraded and dismissed.

At one o'clock their feast was ready. We had all returned to the mansion as soon as the military business was over, but now we again proposed paying them a visit. The ladies, however, declined being of the party: but Captain Townshend and his officers, together with my brother and Mr. Dilkes, and the parson and doctor, walked off with me through the woodland region; and we arrived at the spring just as they were sitting down to their feast. They were seated on planks, raised a little off the ground by large stones, all in a row, with their backs to the rock; a line of planks being, by way of table, placed before them, supported in a similar manner. Each man had his knife, but there was neither fork nor plate. A biscuit, a great piece of yam, a lime, a green capsicum, and some salt in a sea-shell, were placed before every person. The women handed boiled mullet round in a great basket, from which one was taken, and laid on the board before each man. After they had satisfied themselves with fish, six large brown deep dishes with turtle were placed before them, and a small half calabash and spoon given to each person by way of soup-plate. In a very short time they demolished the turtle; and while the calabashes were removed, and the clean sides of the planks turned uppermost, a cup of lime punch was served to each. And now the half sheep was

brought in, on four coarse brown round dishes; shoulder, breast, loin, and leg, all roasted. The people did ample justice to this their third course,— the greatest rarity in the tropical world, good English wedder mutton! leaving scarcely any thing on the bones, for our good watch-dog, Lion; who would have been sorely disappointed, had he known how those bones had once been covered! They finished their feast with coffee and cigars: giving three cheers to King George and the Governor.

At the appointed hour we sat down to dinner at the mansion: but our feast, being much like a great dinner in England, shall be passed over without further notice; with this difference however, that all that remained, when taken from table, was ordered to be distributed among the women and children of the soldiers, and others in our immediate neighbourhood.

Sunday, the 3d of July, was our first Sabbath among our people, after an absence of more than a year. "My dear Edward," said Eliza, "we must not suffer the observance of this holy day to be a matter of less importance to us now, than when we walked with God in this peaceful paradise, in the full enjoyment of each other, and of his divine presence. But, indeed, my beloved husband," continued she, "I do not desire to deceive you, or my own heart, or to dissemble with my heavenly Father; but rather to acknowledge that for a long time past I have been sensible of the briars and thorns which have sprung up in our path,— the cares and riches of this world,— which

have interposed themselves much between even our most kind and tender affections: and have in a great degree separated me from the only true blessing, the abiding presence of our God!" She wept; I was silent: but my heart went along with every word she said; and I almost wished that I were again building up our plank house by her side, with none to behold us, but our faithful little dog, and the Eye that delighteth in innocence and humility.

There was not room in the halls of the mansion for all the people, now quite a hundred; besides, it was arranged that Captain Townshend should send half his ship's company to prayers. Boards were therefore placed on bricks, like so many benches, close round the spurs of the silk cotton tree; and there we assembled, by the ringing of the bell, at ten o'clock. Every one, not excepting the Germans and their wives and children, appeared in clean clothing; and, for the most part, they were neatly attired. The King's sailors were dressed in white jackets and trowsers, with small white straw hats. The clergyman took his place between two of the spurs, where a chair was placed for him, with its back to the tree. The prayers were read with due solemnity; and if there was not a general devotion in his congregation, there was every appearance of it. But to the poor Germans, alas! it was like the Latin service to its papal worshippers.

Mr. Rowley concluded with a most instructive and impressive sermon; taking some of the first chapter of St. John for his text,—"*In the beginning*

was the Word," &c. He held up to our contemplation the Divine Being creating all that our eyes behold, and lastly ourselves. And then he proceeded to show that the same Creative Power, "*the Word and Wisdom of God*," came down from Heaven at the appointed time, and became incarnate in the person of *Jesus*. By which union of *perfect God* and *perfect man*, he became the *Christ, full of grace and truth:* dispensing *sight to the blind, hearing to the deaf, speech to the dumb, motion to the palsied; cleansing the leper*, and even *raising the dead*. The preacher moreover showed, that these miracles were typical of the Saviour's power over the destructive maladies of the human heart, which bring forth sin and spiritual death; and that having left his blessed Gospel as our inheritance, to guide us in the path of life, he died on the cross, making an atonement for our sins, saying, —"*It is finished.*"

After the service was over, my commission as Governor and Commandant of the islands, was read to the people. I then addressed them on their duties to God, and to all persons put in authority over them, and to each other: and said, it would be my endeavour, as it was my duty, to set them a good example in all Christian and moral duties; that I would make their welfare my chief care, as it hitherto always had been; and that in a little time, I would arrange a plan with their pastor for the education of their children, and such others as might choose to avail themselves of it. Several of the people, when I ceased speaking, invoked a blessing on me: and surely it is a delightful thing

for kings and governors to hear themselves blessed by the people.

They now betook themselves to their respective boats, and returned to their several settlements; the sailors departing at the same time to their ship. Captain Townshend expressed himself as highly pleased, and deeply impressed, by the scene he had just witnessed. "I am convinced, Sir Edward Seaward," said he, "that religion is the basis of every genuine virtue; and a due reverence for the Sabbath, the foundation on which all sound discipline, and good order, must be raised. You may flog men into the appearance of being orderly, but then it is only an appearance; and sometimes, when order is most required, it then is no where to be found. I was glad," continued he, "to see my men so attentive; and they will all be the better for it for a while. I wish they could have such an opportunity more frequently." My dear wife said to me, in a sweet low voice, as we walked homewards, which no one heard but myself, —"How gracious was the sight to-day! Yes, my Edward, that dear silk cotton tree, is to us like the *Oak of Mamre.*"

We dined quietly to-day, having no addition to our table but Captain Townshend, whose intelligence and gentlemanly conduct had won much on our esteem.

Early on Monday morning the ship carpenters were sent from the Shark, at my request, to fit up a powder magazine within the cave, with double doors; a pane of glass to be fixed in the inner one, and a place to contain a light behind it. These

doors were to occupy the breach by which I had passed from the outward into the inner cave, where the treasure had been deposited; and this was to be done for the purpose of making the inner cave our powder magazine. Hart, the bricklayer, attended the carpenters, to do his part in fitting in and building up the door-posts: and I was glad to be able to accomplish this necessary job, without taking off our own carpenters from the completion of the Germans' habitations. In two days the magazine was completed; and the twelve barrels of gunpowder landed from the Shark, and lodged; as were also our other ammunition, and blank cartridges.

On Tuesday afternoon Mr. Otway, and Drake, returned from making their survey of the reefs and shoals which surround these islands; and also of the different channels, by which they are accessible. The period, therefore, drew near for bidding adieu to the Shark. My dear wife had written her letter to the Queen, and one to Lady Sundon. Neither did we forget to make our acknowledgments to Governor and Mrs. Trelawney; and we also embraced the opportunity of writing to our friends in England. With these packets from us, and many good wishes, Captain Townshend took his leave on Wednesday at noon; and, agreeable to our promise, Mr. Dilkes, in the Avon, saw him into safety clear of the reefs, and laying his course for the north end of Jamaica.

CHAP. II.

We had now leisure to attend to our immediate affairs. The two pipes of Madeira were landed, and rolled into the cave, and there housed. Drake was desired to get the shot on shore from the schooner, and pile it up in form on the battery; and, with the assistance of Corporal Craig, to see that a due quantity of powder was filled, and every thing relating to our ordnance properly regulated. My brother and myself now went industriously to work, to make up the accounts of each individual in the colony, which cost us the labour of some days; but by the middle of the ensuing week, all these were arranged, and that between him and myself also. This latter, however, was involved in such complexity, that it could only be settled by a liberal disposition on either side; and as he acknowledged to have cleared upwards of 25,000 dollars during my absence, he was in a condition to act as handsomely towards me as I was disposed to act towards him. On my leaving Seaward Islands last year, he was indebted to me 2050 dollars. It was agreed that I should receive this sum; and also 1000 dollars for Peccary Field, the wood, and lands adjoining, as marked out on the plan of the estate; that I should charge him nothing for the use he had made of the Porghee,

but that he should pay the wages of the captain and crew, as had been stipulated. He then paid me over the money, and our business was completed. On the 14th we settled with all the people; many of whom, especially the carpenters, received a pretty good sum, after deducting the amount due for their supplies.

It was arranged that the Porghee should sail for Jamaica on Monday the 18th, or within a few days after; and that my brother James should take a passage in her, to buy the vessel Mr. Finn had been desired to procure. And it was determined that Mr. Dilkes should be his skipper, with the Porghee's crew; and that Drake should endeavour to procure a mate and midshipman from the men of war, with the twelve men the Commodore had promised. Doctor Gordon having had little to do since his arrival, and being a great favourite with my brother, in whose house he had resided nearly six months, frequently accompanied James to the store, where he had assisted him materially, especially on two late occasions, when Spanish vessels visited the islands for commercial purposes. This was fortunate as to the present conjuncture; for he could in consequence confide his business to him while absent; it not being possible for me, from my official situation, to intermeddle in such matters.

On the 21st the Porghee sailed; my brother taking with him nearly 20,000 dollars, about 4760*l.* sterling, the greater part of which it was his intention to remit to England. I wrote letters by Drake, to the Governor of Jamaica, and to the Commodore; and sent by him two Spanish gold sword handles, for their acceptance. On our friends taking their leave

of us, Mrs. James Seaward shed some tears on parting with her husband; and a tear stood in my dear sister's eye, ready to drop. Drake took her gently by the hand; she held her face aside, saying, — "Take care of yourself, and James."

There was not an order for supplies of any kind by the Porghee, the settlement not being in want of any thing necessary either for the industry or comfort of the people. But I sent for a lot of small change, from the sixteenth of a dollar upwards, to the amount of 200 dollars; as I wished to establish an internal traffic with a money medium, as a means of facilitating that industry which it was my intention to foster as far as it might be practicable.

The cabins of the Germans were now completed; and on Friday Mr. and Mrs. Rowley, accompanied by my sister and Rosalie, and our faithful little dog, (not to be despised nor forgotten, because we have now other company,) embarked with my dear wife and myself in the Avon, to pay them a visit. The tobacco had put them in good humour, having dissipated, with its cordial smoke, that sullenness we could not but observe at our former visit. Rosalie was of much service to us, in communicating with the Flemish woman; through whom alone we could converse with her friends. They were well satisfied with their habitations, but were nearly ignorant of tropical husbandry, having received only a short and incomplete lesson from Diego and his men, about the time of the last May rains; when ten acres of land were cleared, hoed, and planted, by their joint efforts. Most of them, however, had been brought up to forest or agricultural

labour. Yet, luckily, one was a weaver; but another had been a sausage-maker, or a beef and ham smoker. I hoped in time to find work for the weaver in his own way, as all the women could spin as well as knit; but in a hot country, the other man's occupation seemed totally unavailable. After taking a careful survey of them and their wants, we made a note of every thing: and informed them, that on Monday they should be supplied with all things necessary; that fish-pots should be made for them; and as their cabins were now finished, they must do every thing in their power to diminish the quantity of beef and pork drawn from the store; that each family should have a couple of goats given to them, and four fowls, and as many ducks; that as soon as their own little harvest was got in, they should be supplied with pigs also: that they must each cut hurdles, and enclose a piece of ground for their yams and cocoas, and corn, pumpkins, melons, and tobacco, &c., as the crops could not otherwise be safe from the stock, especially the pigs; and I promised to send persons to show them how to proceed in the various operations that would be required. Our colonists seemed well satisfied with what we had done, and with all we promised to do; and before we left them the men began to fill a pipe, and regale us with the smoke, as the best incense they could burn on the occasion.

We returned to the Fort to dinner; after which we entered on some very minute discussions respecting the people. I perceived that I had committed an error, in not mixing the Germans with

the others, that they might have an opportunity of learning our language, and many other necessary matters peculiar to the climate in which they were placed. But as I did not see how I could, with the appearance of consistency, alter my plan suddenly, I determined to correct the error as future occasion might allow. However, Mr. Rowley kindly undertook to go to German Town three times a week, from nine o'clock till two, to instruct the children. And the ladies suggested the utility of sending some of the children of the soldiers, and of the bricklayer, now and then, to visit the Germans; and for them to receive, in return, some of the German children; as a means of facilitating the general intercourse, by spreading a mutual knowledge of each other's language. And it was agreed, as preparatory to this step, that Mr. Rowley should take the soldiers' children with him hence, the three days he would attend at German Town; and on the other three days, on which he would keep school here, the German children should be sent for in the morning, and sent back at two o'clock. I congratulated myself on these arrangements, and on the great kindness of Mr. Rowley, whose health now, by the influence of this genial climate, was perfectly restored.

On the morrow, after muster, the plan of education was explained to the people; to which they made no sort of objection. And I told Herbert, the tailor, that I wished him to go every morning by daylight, with some of his family, by canoe to German Town, to assist the settlers there in remaking their clothing, and in cutting out and

making such new garments as they were to receive from Lady Seaward; and I would pay him and his family for whatever time and assistance they might give them. This measure had a twofold object, — to assist them, as was proposed, and to do a little towards rectifying the error I had committed in isolating them from the other settlers. My dear wife now made out a list of such things as were wanted from the store for the Germans; which she sent to my brother's *factotum;* and the Queen herself, could not have desired them to be more completely supplied, even down to scissars, needles, pins, and thread.

These poor people made their appearance as usual on the Sabbath, and attended divine service with as much regularity as if they understood all they heard; but as they were all protestants, we ventured to hope, that by the divine blessing, and our best exertions, the day would soon come when they should profit, in common with our ourselves, by the excellent ministry of our worthy pastor.

On Monday morning, Doctor Gordon was ready to deliver the multifarious order to the Germans; but he requested that some one should be sent to witness the delivery. And he took the trouble to come to the mansion, to explain to Lady Seaward, that it would be of importance to divide the things fairly among them, and not leave it to be done among themselves; for that she might be assured they would quarrel about it. His suggestion was approved; and he was desired to take Rosalie, and also to ask Mrs. Gordon to accompany him, to assist in making the division according to the num-

ber in each family; excepting in the case of house utensils, which had been noted down for whom they were respectively intended. These arrangements being made, Doctor Gordon and his wife, and Rosalie, embarked in the Avon, with the presents — for such they were — amounting in value to 120 dollars, besides the goats and poultry. Herbert and his family had gone before, and they proved a useful addition to the distributing commissioners; Herbert's measure and shears being frequently called upon to execute justice. In the course of a few days, Master Diego supplied the Germans with fish-pots; and they received at the same time, from my own store-house, spades, hoes, and bill-hooks, in sufficient number; the use of which, Diego endeavoured, by practical language, to explain; and, with the help of his men, he also made a hurdle in their presence; — a pattern from which they were to copy, and make their enclosures.

The carpenters being now all disengaged, I turned my attention towards building the house intended for Doctor Gordon, in the northern angle of Allwood's Bay; which had, indeed, been begun just before the Germans arrived, but the workmen were obliged to desist, for the purpose of erecting their habitations. The sawyers had worked constantly on the timber that had been cut down at Allwood's Bay, and at Peccary Field; so that, besides the great supply which they had contributed, to build the cabins at German Town, there yet remained a considerable quantity of boards for any other building. Before my brother went away, he signified to me that he should like Doctor Gordon

to have a house, with some land allotted to it, in his neighbourhood; that such vicinity would be pleasant to both the families, and that his assistance at the store would be more available. I stated this to my dear Eliza, and after some conference it was agreed that I should state my brother's wish to Doctor Gordon, and ask him if he would like it; and if he assented, I should then give orders for his habitation, according to my brother's desire. And that after it was done, I should still commence building a house at Allwoods; but on an improved scale, as if for myself, and give it to Drake in case of his marriage with my sister. I lost no time in opening the business to Doctor Gordon, who, with with his characteristic caution, requested time to consider of it. But, after a day or two, he called on me to say, "he would accept it, all conditions remaining the same, the change of situation excepted." And the following morning was fixed on for selecting the spot, and dining with our sister afterwards at Peccary Field.

We went over at an early hour, leaving no one at home but Mrs. Rota and her black domestics, to take care of the mansion. Mrs. Seaward was delighted by the coming of the whole family; Fidele being no insignificant a member; having fought bravely here against the Peccaries, whose name the field now bears.

Attended by Master Diego, the Doctor and myself went forth to fix on the site of his future residence. We proceeded eastward, until we crossed the little rill that empties itself into the head of the creek. "This is the boundary of my brother's

property," said I; "now look about, and we will build your house wherever you like, and attach a piece of land to it for cultivation." The Doctor said, "Very well, sir." Setting forward at a good pace, he thus kept Diego and myself going, for more than a couple of hours, in the heat of the sun, sometimes doubling like a hare, but never coming to any determination. During this walk of exploration, I had frequent occasion to observe the young fruit trees of the shaddock, and the orange, and the lime, grown up, some to five, some to eight feet in height; the seeds of which, my dear wife and myself put into the ground in February 1734, on the very day we fought with the Peccaries! and I as frequently endeavoured to draw Doctor Gordon's attention to these luxuriant and promising plants. But he was more intent on finding a piece of profitable ground, than fruit trees, or a pleasant situation for his house. I had proposed two different positions for him; but the one "*was bare*," that is rocky; and the other was "rank with bushes." At length I sat down under the shade of a large tree by the rivulet's side, and desired Diego, who cared little for the rays of the sun, "to whom he had been long a neighbour, and near bred," as Othello would say, to go on with the Doctor, wherever he might please to take him. They had scarcely proceeded ten yards from me, when I heard Master Diego begin to lay down the law to the Doctor; whom I heard very soon reply, "You don't know any thing about it, sir." The end of it was, they returned to me in half an hour, without any thing having been determined,

the Doctor dripping at every pore with perspiration. "We will walk slowly home," said I, "and take some weak rum and water, and strip and rub ourselves well with dry towels, and shift our clothes." — "I like your practice, Sir Edward," said he, "it is most excellent prophylactic treatment." After our return, the Doctor was made comfortable; and, although I less required it, I pursued the same measures. My kind wife assisted me, and Mrs. Gordon did the same needful office for her husband. But my dear wife laughed at my description of Gordon's procedure, while his own wife was very angry at him for having behaved in so absurd a manner.

After our grooming, we sat down to an excellent dinner. A roast kid, a pair of Guinea fowls, and a pepper pot, besides the usual dish of fish. We were all remarkably cheerful. The baby was brought in with the dessert, to amuse the ladies; and at my dear wife's request, Rosalie came also, and played and sung, while the parson's two little daughters danced to her guitar. When the ladies retired, the Doctor, the Parson, and myself regaled ourselves with a bowl of lime punch; and before we saw the bottom of it, the Doctor had come to a conclusion, in his own mind, as to the site of his dwelling. "Sir Edward," said he, "I have concluded on the spot we first came to, after crossing the *burne*, just above the creek where ycu catch the cray fish. These is good drinking water close by, and some of the land is not very bad." — "Very well, Doctor Gordon," I replied, "that shall be the place. The workmen shall set about

the house early in the next week; and in the meanwhile you may mark out the exact spot yourself, by driving pegs into the ground, forty feet by sixteen; if such should meet your wishes."—"Just that," said he; stretching his hand at the same time across the table, for me to take hold of; that thereby I might put my hand, if not my seal, to the contract.

In the cool of the evening, before returning to our boat, the whole party made a *détour* of my brother's plantation. All the ground-provisions, as they are called, looked remarkably well. Being completely hoed, they were clean and luxuriant. The sugar-canes were few, but flourishing; and as there was no intention of carrying their propagation further than having a few for the people to eat by way of a luxury, cuttings had been given to the settlers at Allwoods Bay, and to the soldiers. The pine-apple plants had been multiplied by the transplantation of offsets, and many of the old ones were in full bearing. There was a large field of maize and Guinea corn, and a considerable plot of fine tobacco. The fruit trees, raised from the pips sown by the hand of my dear Eliza and myself, were five or six feet high in several directions; and the two shaddock and orange trees, brought from Jamaica in tubs, were beyond a man's reach to their topmost branches, and now in blossom. Some plantain and banana trees, were already loaded with fruit; and pumpkins and melons might be seen in every direction. There being nothing now wanting in the vegetable kingdom, to perfect the beauty of this enchanting spot, but the maturity of the orange trees; whose golden fruit, richly glowing in

beautiful contrast amidst its dark green foliage, reminds the spectator of the classic garden of the Hesperides.

Master Diego and his crew were in waiting for us. Having finished a most agreeable and refreshing walk, in the cool of the evening, through my brother's grounds, we then enjoyed an equally pleasant row of a short hour to our own home. Coffee awaited us on our return; and while sitting over this agreeable beverage, smoking my cigar, the children of the colony were made the subjects of our conversation. We counted up fifteen children, seven boys and eight girls, belonging to the tailor, mason, and the four soldiers, between four and twelve years of age; and eighteen belonging to the Germans, viz. eleven boys and seven girls, between the ages of two years and fourteen. These were large numbers to be transported a distance of six miles morning and evening. But it was concluded, that as the soldiers were located at the northern extremity of the isthmus, and Herbert the tailor, occupied a house there also; and that as Soldiers' Town was more than four miles from the fort, and only two miles from German Town, it would be advisable to cut a footpath through a defile, now thickly grown with acacias, prickly pears, aloes, and other thorny plants, which hitherto had prevented overland communication between German Town and Peccary Field; a distance of not more than one mile. And also to build a schoolroom at the back of the Black Rock, between Soldiers' Town and the Doctor's allotment. I had no hesitation in adopting this plan; for, independent of

the daily responsibility of transporting all these children, I could not well spare a boat's crew to do it.

I sent for Diego before I went to bed, and told him, he must take his boat's crew, and the two sawyers, and two of my brother's men, (Jacob and David, who formerly had worked with him,) early to-morrow morning, and commence cutting a footpath between the hills, from Peccary Field to German Town. Also, to send the four carpenters to me, who with their apprentices, and Hart the bricklayer and his apprentice, were to set about erecting a schoolroom at the back of the Black Rock, opposite Peccary Field. And I said, that I would go in his boat to my brother's house, as soon as he might be ready in the morning.

Soon after daylight we were up and dressed, and the men ready. I told Allwood, the room must be thirty feet long, and twenty feet broad, and fourteen feet high in its sides; and to pick out timber, and boards, and planks accordingly, while Hart prepared the foundation. Mr. Rowley and myself embarked with Diego, while Hart and his apprentice followed in a canoe. On our arrival, I explained my business to Mrs. Seaward, and to Doctor Gordon; requesting the latter to pardon me for delaying his house for another fortnight, as I conceived the occasion a public duty, and somewhat pressing, having seen sufficient reason for abandoning the plan of carrying the children to and fro by water. "*Jus bonum dicis. Just that*, as we say in the North," said the Doctor, without demurring; "all private right must needs be set

aside for the public good. And I shall be glad enough," continued he, "to see a schoolroom near to Mr. James (meaning my brother), and to myself, which might be a great advantage to this neighbourhood." I thanked the Doctor for the handsome way in which he had received my proposition; then, after taking breakfast, we set off from Peccary Field House, and walked round the head of the creek, where the Doctor stopped us to look at the spot he had fixed on for his house: the very spot we had first arrived at, on the day he walked forth to make his selection. Hence we proceeded to the north side of the Black Rock, where we met Hart. The choice of the site for the school was left to Mr. Rowley; who, without much hesitation, fixed on a rocky hillock about two hundred yards to the northward of the rock; the intermediate space consisting of wiry grass and shrubby plants. I approved his selection; and at once, with the assistance of Hart, we marked out the angular points. That done, we returned by the way we came, leaving our very capable builder to go to work in making a level foundation. About midday the carpenters arrived at the head of the creek, in the Avon, with a cargo of materials; which they had to carry round the rock, to the site of the intended schoolroom. In the evening, Mr. Rowley and myself were piloted home by Master Diego, who gave us a good account of his own progress.

On the following day I felt a degree of leisure, and rest of mind, which I had not experienced since my last arrival. The German men were set to work fishing, and making their hurdles for en-

closures; their women, under the guidance of Herbert and his family, were employed on their clothing. The carpenters and bricklayer had occupation given to them for at least a fortnight; and Diego, with the disposable force of the settlement, would have enough to do to cut the new way between the hills, within the same period. The soldiers had their alternate day of guard at the plank house; while Corporal Craig took the look-out at the flagstaff, and did duty as a sort of town major, where in truth there was yet nothing worthy of the name of a town.

On the evening of this day we all went out to refresh ourselves by a walk towards the southern part of our domain: here we met Abel, as he was driving home his flock of goats, to pen them for the milking, and for the night. It was a goodly sight: upwards of a hundred were then just issuing from among the trees, beyond the open ground. As they approached, we observed a part of them run bleating before the rest towards the pen. The kids of these impatient ones, confined within the stoccado, hearing their mothers, now answered them with an incessant clamour; but the poor little urchins were destined still to *baa* till their dams had first submitted themselves to the hands of the milkers.

When we considered how many of these animals had been given to the settlers, it was surprising to behold such an offspring from the single pair that had been wrecked with us; the six she-goats subsequently brought from Jamaica having been given away, so that no part of their progeny had

increased our own flock. But now, perhaps, the total increase on the islands, exceeded two hundred; none having been killed, up to the present time, one solitary kid excepted. Our poultry also was in excess. But the milk of the goats and the eggs of the poultry, if superabundant to ourselves, nevertheless found ample consumers among the women and children of the settlement. The pigs had become absolutely a nuisance; their numbers and their noise were insufferable; so that to diminish this noisy and noisome population, some were ordered to be killed from time to time, and served to the new settlers in lieu of salt provision. Having reflected on this survey of our stock, my dear wife requested that two dozen of geese, three dozen of ducks, and two dozen more of fowls, and twelve additional goats, might be divided among the Germans. I approved the proposal; and instructions were given to Abel on our return from our walk, to have them all in readiness on Saturday morning.

In consideration of the pressing works on hand, orders were issued, signifying that there would not be a muster on the morrow; but four of the Germans were to come over, nevertheless, for their supplies; one of whom was to be Hinklemann, besides the Flemish woman his wife. On Saturday morning these people came; Hinklemann's wife soon after making her appearance at the mansion, where she received some special marks of favour; after which she was made to comprehend, for the information of her friends, what was going forward for the benefit of their settlement. The stock being then delivered to the men, the mode of distribution

was correctly explained to her, and the party departed; well pleased to carry back agreeable tidings, and a welcome present of live stock, to the people.

On Sunday the 31st, we all assembled under the silk-cotton tree to prayers, every person well dressed for the occasion, and an unexceptionable demeanour observed. After service I remarked, that although the Germans had on clean clothes, their skins generally seemed far from clean. I suspected they had no soap, but on enquiry found this was not the case. I then thought fit to remonstrate with them on the subject. They complained that water was at a great distance, and that it was quite one person's business in each family every day to fetch it. Now, this had been a great oversight in locating them; therefore, on hearing it, I took my wife aside, to advise with her on what could be done. She would not allow me to say they were a dirty people; adding, with her gentle disapproval of the charge, "that we should be so too, if we were deficient in water." — "But what is our remedy, dear Eliza?" said I; "they must be clean, cost what it may." "Well, then," she replied, "get some asses from Jamaica, for the poor people to fetch their water; and meanwhile I will take the women aside with Rosalie, and talk over the matter; telling them, until the asses come, they must do as well as they can; but at any rate, they and their husbands and children must bathe in the sea, at least every Sunday morning before coming to prayers." Having made this arrangement between ourselves, the Flemish woman was desired to say that something would speedily be done to

remedy the inconvenience; after which, my dear Eliza, with Rosalie, took all the German women into the mansion, where, as it has been elsewhere expressed, "there was a *grand palaver*," and all things explained to their satisfaction.

By the middle of August the schoolroom was finished; and Diego having completed his task rather sooner than he expected, had an opportunity of replenishing the turtle craal; and of doing many other things required at the cotton tree plantation, where there was a fine growth of all the vegetable productions I had from time to time brought into the island.

On Monday the 15th, early in the morning, all the children were assembled in the schoolroom, to the number of thirty-three; at which meeting we took care to be present. It had been arranged that every child should bring a bag of provisions for its dinner; and we were glad to see that the rule was so judiciously complied with at the outset: we had also directed that a woman from each respective settlement should escort its children to school in the morning, remaining with them all day to take them back in the evening. Hinklemann's wife was desired to perform this service for the first month; and during that month Rosalie was deputed to attend school with Mr. Rowley; and we had much pleasure in hearing Mrs. Gordon offer her services likewise. The instructors were now left to commence their labours; and my dear wife, with Mrs. Rowley and Dr. Gordon, walked round to Peccary Field House, where we spent the day; and

in the evening returned with our good pastor, and his family, and Rosalie, to the mansion.

The carpenters and bricklayer were again making the necessary preparations to commence Doctor Gordon's house; and on Wednesday they were all fairly at work, with the addition of the sawyers, who rendered great assistance in cutting and squaring the timber.

About noon this day, Corporal Craig reported a vessel off the south channel. I went with him to the signal-post on the promontory, taking with me the soldier on guard: the vessel was a galliot, lying to, with Dutch colours flying. Our colours were hoisted; and, on my return to the fort, a canoe was despatched for Doctor Gordon, whom I requested to accompany Diego in the six-oared boat to board her; the Avon being with the carpenters, and at this time full of planks. The boat stood out to sea under sail, and piloted the galliot in to the anchorage a little before six in the evening. I put on my laced coat, to receive the Dutch skipper, who soon came on shore. He told me his vessel was from Curaçoa on a trading voyage; that he had called here to see what he could do, having heard of the place from a Spaniard. He spoke English tolerably well, and began to enumerate his cargo. I told him, I had nothing to do with that, but desired to inform him, that "there were no harbour charges exacted here; that trade was free, excepting in spirits, wine, or beer, which could not be sold or landed without my permit." With this understanding, he retired with my brother's *fac-totum*, Doctor Gordon, to enter upon business; and I had

little fear, novice as the Doctor might be in matters of this kind, that he would allow the Dutch skipper to overreach him in a bargain. He was in possession of invoices and prices current, so that he knew what his own goods should fetch, and what he could afford to give the Dutchman for his.

Thursday and part of the next day were spent by the Dutchman and the Doctor in trading negotiations, but nothing had been concluded between them. I had in the mean while sent a turtle and some fish and vegetables to the crew, as an act of hospitality; for which they were thankful, and behaved very orderly. But it unfortunately happened that some of the Germans found their way on board the galliot, and as they could make themselves fully understood, they quickly discovered that there was Hollands Geneva on board; a few cases of which belonging to the crew, our new settlers as quickly laid out, in the purchase of them, most of the money they had reserved of the Queen's gift; and contrived to take the liquor away, without the Captain's knowledge. The consequence was, that all the men at German Town got drunk, and went over to Peccary Field by the new made road, in a very disorderly manner. A canoe was immediately despatched to me with the intelligence; on which I ordered Diego's boat to be manned; then putting Corporal Craig and the three soldiers on board the galliot, to keep possession of her till my return, I rowed with all possible haste to Peccary Field; and found the delinquents there, quarrelling with the carpenters, who had come from their work on the Doctor's house, to endeavour to make the drunken

men return home. By this time some of the German women had come over, and they were sadly distressed at the scene. I sent Diego with two of his men, immediately to German Town, to break every bottle of the Hollands they could find; and, partly by entreaties and partly by force, I contrived to make eight of the delinquents return. Three were so drunk they could not now walk; and one had been so beastly so, before the rest set out, he could not accompany them. On Diego's reappearance, he reported to have found three cases: the bottles of one were quite empty, and also five bottles in another. But he had broke the twelve full bottles, in the remaining case, and also the seven full ones left in the other; and he learned through Hinklemann's wife, who had now picked up a little English, that the men had paid three dollars for each case.

After setting this matter to rights in the best way I could, I desired all the carpenters to sleep that night at Peccary Field, to make Mrs. Seaward's mind easy. I then returned in the boat; and after landing, sent Diego to the galliot to bring the Captain on shore. On his arrival, I told him what had been done, in despite of my regulations, to the incalculable mischief of some of the people. He protested his innocence of the affair, and total ignorance of what had happened, until the soldiers were put on board; but said, he had since discovered that four cases of Hollands had been sold by his men, besides twenty pounds of tobacco; adding, that he was ready to make any atonement in his power. This was all, perhaps, that could be required of

him. But I told him, the guilty persons must be punished. To this he made no objection; and accordingly the men who had sold the spirits and tobacco to the Germans, were ordered on shore. I spoke to them myself, telling them that as they had presumed to do this against the regulations of the place, their Hollands should be confiscated; and that they must return the money, for that which they had sold. The men instantly laid down the money for the Hollands, and also the amount for the tobacco; but I bade them take up the latter sum, as there was no order against the sale of tobacco. Just as the business had drawn to this point, Diego came in, to say the Porghee was standing in to the harbour with another schooner. Having now done with the skipper and his men, I ordered them on board; and sent word to Corporal Craig, to leave two of the soldiers in the vessel until the morning.

My beloved wife was exceedingly distressed at this affair. She felt that the Queen's honour was sullied by the conduct of her countrymen; and she feared that they might hereafter prove a source of disquietude to the settlement, and of repeated vexations to me. I said every thing in my power to assure her, that I considered the act as the result of barbarous ignorance, and not of a rebellious or vicious spirit; and that I already forgave it, although an appearance of displeasure would be required, and measures must be taken to prevent the recurrence of such an offence again. — "You are always kind and good," returned my dear Eliza, "and I believe all you say; but still such

an act leaves a stain behind it that never can be completely removed; and I should be doubly grieved, if any thing so disgraceful to her people, were ever to come to the ears of the Queen. I think," continued she, "in looking into my own mind, it is for her Majesty, rather than for those ignorant boors, that I feel so sharply."

In the morning the Doctor was sent to German Town, to see in what state the debauchees might be, so as to render them professional assistance if required. He took with him the twelve dollars, of which I mulcted the Dutch sailors, to be returned to the wives of the blockheads who gave it for gin. He recovered the fourth case full, which the women had hid away, and he brought it to me; at the same time giving an account of what he had seen and what he had done. I desired him to deposit the case by the side of his medicine chest, and draw on its contents medicinally, when any sick person might require it.

We were all glad to see our friend Drake again, — a fellow of sterling worth, being all that he seemed, — honest, enterprising, and gentlemanly. He delivered his letters — not a few — from the Governor of Jamaica, and from the Commodore; one also from the Honourable Captain Townshend; others from my bankers in London, from my excellent father-in-law, and from my sisters, and uncle. There was much consequential matter in these communications, which at present I shall not notice. The Commodore had received the sword-handle, thankfully in his way. Drake told me what he said; but I may not repeat it. However,

the Porghee was repaired, and fitted out in the best manner, with a midshipman who had served his time as mate, and also with a youngster, besides a carpenter's mate, a boatswain's mate, and twelve men; and with six guns, four pounders. This was more than was promised — more than I could have expected: but the Commodore himself had taken the trouble to go on board; and having visited her, said, "she was a fine vessel, and deserved the equipment he would order." His letter was to the same purpose.

My brother visited the Dutchman on board his galliot, on the same evening of his arrival, notwithstanding the *bruit* he had occasioned, and the unpleasantness which still in some measure existed at Peccary Field. The Dutchman did not find the master so inflexible, as his *factotum* had been; so they arranged for commencing business the next day; which was done to a considerable amount. But I did not relax in keeping a guard on board the vessel; and such I made a standing order with respect to all traders that might hereafter enter the port.

On Sunday morning the Dutchman sailed: that was his business, therefore I did not interfere; and, in truth, I was glad he was gone: for my brother had thought fit to purchase a quantity of Hollands and Rhenish wines from him, for which I could not refuse a permit; although, after what had happened, I was sorry he had done so. Some of the German men were too sick to appear at church: but they who came, expressed much contrition for their conduct. In the afternoon Doctor

Gordon returned with them to visit the settlement. He found three of the debauchees attacked with fever, and he wrote to me to that effect, but did not leave them. One of these, Rudolph Schnieder, died on the Tuesday following. The other two gradually recovered. On Wednesday, Mr. Rowley consecrated a piece of ground near to their town, in which the remains of the unhappy man were on that day deposited; all the colony being present, and the funeral service devoutly performed. This was the first death that had taken place in the island: a sad mark for August, 1737.

Our letters, and the dismal occurrence that had just happened, occupied our attention during the present week. My brother, however, was engaged in landing his cargo brought down by his own schooner, the Tom Cod, — a fine New England vessel, well suited for commercial purposes — very different from the Porghee, which was less calculated to carry bulk, but more of a flyer.

In consequence of my letter from Governor Trelawney, in which he returned me many thanks for my superb present, I ordered Drake to hold himself in readiness to sail immediately for Bluefield's River, on the Mosquitto shore, to treat with the chiefs there to supply two hundred Indians for the subjection of the Maroons at Jamaica. I quickly furnished him with instructions, and a copy of Governor Trelawney's letter; also gave him money to purchase twelve asses and two riding mules, with saddles and bridles for the latter, at the nearest Spanish port he could obtain them; and desired him, if possible, to procure a person that

could teach our people to make Spanish plait and hats from the leaves of the palm-tree. He sailed on Thursday, the 25th, for Bluefield's River, which may be distant from Seaward Islands about one hundred leagues.

All the women of the settlement, besides all the men excepting the carpenters, were now employed in getting in and housing the second harvest, which was most abundant every where; and as the Germans had yet but little to do on their ground, for so many of them, they were engaged elsewhere as their services were required, for which they were paid a fair remuneration.

In less than three weeks Drake returned, bringing with him two Indian chiefs. He had also procured the asses and mules, with some awkward riding furniture, at a small Spanish port to the southward, called *Alvos*. He, however, failed in getting any one to teach us the straw manufactory, which the Spaniards only understand to perfection. I entertained the chiefs in the way I thought most agreeable to them; and by way of conciliating their respect, I presented each of them with a couple of doubloons, on taking their leave. Drake landed the asses and mules the very day he arrived; and next morning he sailed again for Jamaica with the two chiefs, taking a letter from myself to Governor Trelawney; having no other commission than the purchase of two young new negroes, a man and a woman, for Doctor Gordon: which I desired him to do, that I might be enabled to fulfil my promise to the Doctor, when his house should be ready to receive him.

On the Saturday following, September 17th, a parade was held. The Germans had become more industrious than heretofore; and now seemed anxious, by their observance of cleanliness and every other regulation, to retrieve their character. After parade, I gave them to understand, that it had been my intention to stop their tobacco for three months, as a punishment for their late bad conduct: but I looked upon the death of their comrade, to which that conduct had been accessory, as a punishment from a higher power; therefore I should bury the whole affair in his grave, and behave to them as if nothing of the kind had happened. My dear wife shed a tear when she heard me say this, and turned aside.

On Monday, twenty-four pigs were selected for the Germans, as they were now in a condition to feed them; and six of the asses also were appropriated to their use. Two more were given to the soldiers, two sold to my brother, and two retained at the silk cotton-tree plantation. The Reverend Mr. Rowley mounted his mule to-day, for the first time; taking his ride through the woodland region, and by the water's edge of the sandy isthmus, to the seat of his daily labour. Mrs. Gordon, as yet a guest at Peccary Field, still assisted him; but the services of Rosalie and the wife of Hinkleman, were no longer thought necessary.

Our Scotch grass, which grew luxuriantly to the height of from three to four feet in and about the water-run, that overflowed from the reservoir below the great tree, now came into use to feed our mules: the asses did not require such nutritious

food; they would feed with the goats on the scantiest herbage.

Towards the end of this week we were thrown into great consternation, by the small-pox appearing on board my brother's schooner, in the person of Harry Rock, Anne's brother. The doctor, highly approving the inoculation plan introduced from Turkey by Lady Wortley Montagu, immediately set about preparing all the people for it, both old and young, who had not experienced the disease. Every one under preparation was washed with soap and fresh water, then physicked for three days, then inoculated; and after three days more, when the arm showed signs of the inoculation having taken, they were made to bathe in the sea three times every day, until the pustules filled. These were then all pricked with needles, to let out the matter, and the patients again well purged, but not bathed. Much praise is due to Dr. Gordon, for his great judgment, and wise departure from the ordinary destructive practice in treating this hideous and fatal malady. In consequence, we did not lose a single individual. Yet poor Rock had a narrow escape, having been almost at the point of death. I may here remark, that the success of Gordon's practice was subsequently sent to Jamaica; but the chief of the faculty there, discountenanced the whole proceeding as empirical; and, consequently, few ventured to follow it.

This sickness among us, gave my dear wife and the other ladies enough to do, as well as the doctor; but all that kindness could conceive, and humanity could bestow, was provided for the com-

fort of the people; and early in October every one was well, and all things going on in their usual routine.

Our friend Drake made his appearance on Friday the 14th. He had met with a gracious reception from the Governor, from whom he brought me a letter of thanks. The Porghee had been again at the Mosquitto shore, where he had landed the two Indian chiefs, to make the required levy. He brought from them to me, a present of four beautiful deer, and eight fine turkeys of a peculiar breed. The breasts of these birds are of a deep orange colour, the wings and tail black, but the extreme ends of the wing and tail feathers are tipped with orange also; so that when the cock bird showed himself off in his pride, the expansion of his plumage exhibited the orange on the tail feathers as forming a golden iris. The commission I gave him for the purchase of the two young negroes, intended for Doctor Gordon, had been duly executed; and indeed, after the humane, skilful, and unwearied attentions of that gentleman, I was happy in the opportunity of presenting him with these useful domestics for a term of seven years; after which it was understood their labours would be their own, and themselves to all intents and purposes free. He received them thankfully; and being a man of an honest and good heart, expressed himself much pleased with the conditions of their servitude. "I am no friend to slavery," said he; "and if you please, Sir Edward, we will call the man *William Wallace*, and the girl *Joan of Arc*."—I cheerfully approved the nomination, falling in with the doctor's

patriotic whim. The beautiful deer were now turned out into the woodland region, where they had plenty of shade, and I may say a fine park to range in.

On Monday morning, Drake sent some of his men to spread an awning from tree to tree in the cocoa-nut grove, where we were to dine, and entertain all Mr. Rowley's scholars in the afternoon. As Drake was resolved to make it a day of pleasure, he requested to have the other mule, and ride over to the Black Rock with Mr. Rowley early in the morning: "for," said he, "I have not crossed ass, horse, or mule, since the day you saw me show off in that way at Spanish Town."—A mule's usual pace suited the parson very well, who was content to go on quietly; but our friend Drake was desirous of a gallop, so by way of spurs he fastened a corking pin to the heel of one of his shoes, and made the jade feel it, just as they were setting off. The mule, perhaps had belonged to some sober-minded friar, who being satisfied to eat and sleep, and most likely to take a nap, after eating, upon his mule, she was not accustomed to such a salutation; so in the moment she felt the pin, up went her heels, and, in spite of the close Spanish saddle, threw the gallant sailor over her head. When I saw that he was not hurt, I could not help laughing; but my dear wife and Maria ran out immediately to his assistance, and the rogue, seeing this, kept his ground, that they might help him up. Poor Maria had screamed, and now she wept upon his neck. He did not intend, or expect this: he rose therefore quickly, saying, "Dear ladies—dear Maria, if I

may call you so — this is too kind." — Maria was vexed at being so taken in; therefore turned away without reply, and came into the house. Drake quickly followed her; and after an interview of a few minutes, long enough to make up a lovers' quarrel, he returned and remounted the mule; taking the precaution, however, to remove the pin from his heel. He and the parson then bid us adieu, and jogged on cosily together.

Mistress Rota furnished an ample repast, to take with us to the cocoa-nut grove; where we were to meet all my brother's family, including Doctor and Mrs. Gordon. A little after twelve o'clock, I sent Mr. and Mrs. Rowley and children, together with my sister and Rosalie, in Diego's boat, taking with them all the good things, saying, we would follow. My dear wife and myself had a fancy in our heads, to realise which, was our object in remaining behind. I had desired Diego to get the old punt down to the rocky point, which he did. And after the party had gone, my dear Eliza dressed herself in the old island garb of our former days—boots, trowsers, short tunic, and buntin sash, with a turbaned mouchoir on her head; I also dressed myself as in the habit of those times, with pistols and a hatchet in my belt, having the canteen with water, as formerly, slung over my shoulder. I gave my wife a pike in her hand, and then took up a basket, into which she had put a piece of salt beef and some biscuit, and likewise the old gaskets, for the occasion. We had religiously preserved these memorials of our early days. Then taking the hand of my beloved, followed by our faithful Fidele, who, after smelling

to the end of the pike, and to our old leggings or gaiters, jumped about, frisking his tail, as if the old days of his prowess against the Iguana were to be renewed again.

We bent our steps through the woodland region; where soon we became like those who are said to be under enchantment. Scarcely had the trees shut out every other object, when all that had passed since our earliest days here, appeared as a dream. "Oh Edward," my wife exclaimed, "I am now indeed again happy!—do we dream?—or have we dreamt?—If we have only dreamt; all that seemed lately so real, then, is passed! Yet if it were but a dream, it had the full evil of life; for I suffered both cares and anxieties, and a painful estrangement from you!—Oh! it were enough to suffer so, even in a dream! But I fear ours has been, and is, one of those day-dreams, to end only with life."—She threw her arms upon my neck, and I knelt to receive the embrace, and the tear that her tender heart swelled to bestow upon me. This was a moment of too much bliss to last beyond a moment, but it was as the visit of an angel to the drooping spirit of man; it was the fountain in the wilderness; and soon we felt refreshed and joyous, following the path, till we passed the well-known spring and the rock. As in old times, I then placed her in the stern of the punt; followed by Fidele, leaping and skipping by her side, as in days of yore. The two scull oars were quickly in my hands, when cheerily I rowed along the beach, to the foot of the cocoa-nut grove.

Diego was the only person who knew us when

we leaped on shore. He gave a great shout on seeing us, and fell on his face upon the ground. We were in the dress he first saw us in, when he and his hesitating friends prostrated themselves before me. Diego's conduct caused much commotion among our friends, for he quickly sprang up again, crying out, "Señor Don Edvardo!" and "La Señora Donna nuestra!"—This only increased their embarrassment, while we advanced with pike and basket, arm in arm, towards them. Rosalie was the first to perceive the dog, exclaiming, "Ah Fidele!" On reaching the astonished group, they appeared much amused by our appearance, as if in masquerade. But when Diego told his story, a deeper interest was excited; our dresses were examined with the most minute attention; the pike in my Eliza's hand, looked at over and over again; and even the punt, on which no eye hitherto had deigned to look, became an object of curiosity and respect.

The collation was already spread out. We desired our friends then to sit down to it, but permit us to dine as we had done in former days; promising to join them afterwards, when the children came. Our party had good feeling and good taste enough, to comply with our whim; and while they sat down to a sumptuous feast, under an extended canopy, my dear Eliza and myself retired to the ledge of rocks a little above them, where we spread out our simple fare. The capsicums she had sown with her own hands were growing luxuriantly around us, so that we had no more to do but pluck one of them, to give a relish to the beef; but we

now only pretended to eat, the keen relish was gone for such food; and perhaps if the experiment had been made of our lonely island being restored to us, we should have found ourselves equally disqualified for the enjoyment of that solitude, which our present little pageant was intended to recall and celebrate. When our friends had nearly dined, and were calling out to us to join them at their dessert, I took the gaskets from the basket, and to their surprise ascended a cocoa-nut tree, and with my hatchet sent the fruit tumbling to the ground. Some of the party came to scramble for the nuts, while I gravely descended, and taking a couple under my arm, returned to my dear wife: I then clave these nuts, that she and I might drink; afterwards collecting the others that had fallen, into our basket, we presented them to our friends, and joined the party in their festivities.

The poor dear children made their appearance about three o'clock, and were delighted by the sight of so many good things. They were instantly placed round the remains of our rural feast, and made happy by the helping hands of all the party. Rosalie, who was a joyous sweet-tempered creature, soon after sung to her guitar; the children then danced, or attempted to dance; the ladies walked about; and looked on while my friend Drake and myself lighted our cigars, and took post on the ledge of rocks above. My dear Eliza soon joined us there, chatting and looking on, delighted with seeing so many happy, and the more so by being where she was.

In the evening Diego was sent with his boat to

take the German children home, to save them a long walk; but the others returned on foot. My brother, with his family, crossed over to Peccary Field with his boat; but to our other friends a choice lay between the two mules, the punt, or a walk. I suggested that the parson should take up his own wife, and Drake should take up my sister, behind them on the mules, and go home. The ladies laughed at this joke of mine, for such it was; but excused themselves, saying they could not ride without a pillion. I then proposed that the whole party should walk; but Mrs. Rowley replied, she would like to go in the punt with her girls; and Maria expressed the same desire. "Very well, then, Drake," said I; "you may have the honour to row our Argos back: for, in my eyes, this humble craft is to us what the renowned Argos was in the eyes of the Greeks; and who knows but, Jason like, you may take with you in it a golden fleece." He instantly met the wish, but I think without perceiving the allusion I had made to my sister. The parson now gave the mules to Drake's midshipmen, who liked a ride as well as their captain; Mr. Rowley himself, and Mr. Dilkes, choosing to walk. My dear Eliza and myself followed, once more treading the beach of the isthmus leisurely together, arm in arm; while Rosalie and Fidele kept behind us at a distance, amusing themselves with whatever presented itself on their way. "This has been a happy day, dear Edward," said my sweet angel, as we retired to rest. "Yes, my love, it has indeed been a happy day," I replied, — "a gleam of sunshine through the clouds of life."

CHAP. III.

On Thursday morning, the German look-out, on the northern height of George's Island, hoisted the Union Jack, as a signal for a sail; and nearly at the same time, Corporal Craig hoisted his colours on the promontory, with a gun; and, soon after, he made his appearance, to report two sail in the offing. I did not know what this might mean; having lately had accounts of very unfriendly, not to say hostile, proceedings on the part of the Spaniards towards the commerce of England; accompanied by that insolent and menacing conduct, which left little doubt of war between the two countries, being near at hand: and as my position might be deemed the outpost in the West Indies, I could not tell how soon we might be attacked. I therefore ordered the bugle to sound; and, like the Scottish clans of the year 1715, our people quickly came to the gathering. Drake got the Porghee under weigh, and stood out to the southward; while Dilkes, with the Tom Cod's crew in the Avon, sailed through the northern channel, taking the precaution to be armed. My caution proved to be unnecessary on this occasion; but caution, like secresy, is a friend that seldom will betray you; and therefore, though not always wanted, should never be disregarded.

The strangers soon came in, and anchored. My

uncle's brig, the Mary, and a Spanish merchant schooner, were the two vessels seen from the promontory; and the other, the most important, was a king's cutter from Jamaica, with despatches to me from the Governor and Commodore.

Our old friend, Captain Taylor of the Mary, was delighted at seeing the improvement of our settlement, and the respectable appearance of our military guard: but he did not much like a soldier being put on board his vessel; which, however, he cheerfully acceded to, when I told him what had happened, and that it had become, in consequence, a standing regulation of the port; another sentinel, at the same time, being stationed on board the Spaniard.

The Commodore's despatches, contained an admiralty confirmation of the admission of the Porghee on the list of the navy; and with it, a confirmed commission for Lieutenant Francis Drake, now appointed by the Lords Commissioners to the command of that vessel; — an event highly gratifying both to Drake and myself.

But the letters from the Governor, were of serious and immediate importance: they went to state the horrible depredations committed on our trade generally by the Spaniards in the West Indies; expressing a wish that I would go to Porto Bello in my yacht, accompanied by H. M. cutter Seagull, and, in the name of the British government, demand restitution of two ships, with mahogany and logwood, captured off Cozumel by an armed vessel belonging to Porto Bello, and reported to have been brought to that port. After some private

conversation, first with my dear wife, who was to me what the *Czarina* had been to *Peter;* and then with Drake, my excellent captain; I determined to sail without loss of time, on the business confided to me, and fixed Saturday for our departure. My Eliza then entreated me to take her along with me, saying, "It is a civil mission, Edward; therefore I hope it may not be improper for me to accompany you." I appreciated this kind and meek appeal to my feelings and understanding; so without hesitation I consented to do so, expressing, at the same time, the happiness her request had given me. I must now do Drake the justice to observe, that on my communicating to him my business at Porto Bello, he said, — "It is not likely that vessels taken off the island of Cozumel, should be brought to Porto Bello: however," continued he, "I have no business to think about it; my business is to obey orders." So saying, he left me, to get the Porghee ready for sea.

Some English presents were put on board, for the Governor of Porto Bello; — half a dozen hams, two immense Gloucester cheeses, one hundred weight of double refined sugar, and three hampers of London porter. All necessary arrangements being completed, we sailed early on Saturday forenoon; my wife taking with her Rosalie, who, she thought, possibly might be of use to us in transacting any written official business with the Spaniards; for, as I have before stated, this girl was a good French scholar. I would have taken honest Diego with me too, but was afraid, lest they might seize him as soon as he was discovered to be a

Spanish negro; for we all knew right well, they were not very nice about laying hands on any thing, or any body, to which they could advance the shadow of a claim.

On Sunday, at noon, we made the island of St. Andero, which lay in our way; and, about two o'clock, stood in on the west side, upon pretence of desiring a pilot for Porto Bello, and anchored outside the reef: but my real design was to see a place not fifty leagues distant from our own settlement, — and a wretched place it appeared to be, as far as we could discern with our glasses, — cannon without carriages, soldiers without appointments; two monasteries, but no fortification worth a rush; and a miserable-looking population; with no trade, but a guarda costa lying in the roads. This fellow was far from courteous: we had no sooner anchored, than he sent a boat on board, in which there was a man who spoke tolerable English, a native of Gibraltar; and through whom he gave us to understand, we must not anchor there; that he had orders, not to allow any English vessels, whatever, to come within what he pleased to call *the Spanish jurisdiction.* I told him in reply, that these vessels not only belonged to the King of England, but that I was going on a mission from the British government to the Governor of Porto Bello; and, being strange to the coast, we wanted a pilot. "Then," said he, "*you may want a pilot:* for the King of Spain does not desire to see any of you in his seas; and if you do not take my warning, and go back, perhaps the Governor may send the crews to hard labour, and the Cabalero's officers to Gloria Castle!"

If our two vessels had not overawed this hidalgo, I think it not unlikely he would have proceeded to still ruder measures. After a few hours we weighed, and steered for Porto Bello, leaving the guarda costa at his anchor.

On Wednesday 26th of October, about ten o'clock in the forenoon, we made Punta Gorda, and worked up nearly all day for Porto Bello, to the northward and eastward, against a strong current. None but strangers to the coast, would have made this mistake; in consequence of which we could not get in that night, but by the morning we were off the high land to the northward of the port. The vessels had been seen during the previous day, and our colours had declared what we were. Early in the morning an armed boat with an officer, was despatched to us, as we lay becalmed under the land. This officer spoke French, so that I readily made him understand who I was, stating my business. He said we must remain where we were, till he went in and returned. About ten o'clock he appeared again, accompanied by another officer of superior rank. This officer, whose name is too long to write, (the name of the governor being long enough,) said that "His Excellency Don Francisco Martinez de Retez desired that I should communicate my business to him, who would then impart it to his excellency." I told him in reply, to go back to His Excellency Don Francisco Martinez de Retez, and tell him, that a man, not inferior to himself in rank and fortune, and equal to him in honour with his sovereign, was here; and that in consequence of his

message, I should send the cutter into the port, with a letter to *demand* an audience; at the same time signifying to the officer, that he might, if he chose, go in the cutter. He however declined the honour I intended him, saying he did not know whether his excellency was aware of what I had told him; but that he had only obeyed the orders he had received; adding, that he thought it might be well to allow him time to return and explain the matter to the governor, before I sent in the cutter, lest any mischief should come out of it. I replied, that I would lay to another hour, the breeze having now set in; but at the expiration of the hour, if due respect was not paid to my representation, the cutter *should* go in; as it was the right of every ship or vessel belonging to His Britannic Majesty, so to do; but that my coming in person, or not, would depend on the conduct of the governor of Porto Bello on the occasion. In about an hour another boat was seen coming off, and I awaited her arrival. She brought no message, but put a pilot on board each of our vessels, and we instantly made sail, and stood into the harbour. It had been agreed that the cutter should fire a salute, on passing the fort on our larboard hand; but not the schooner, lest the Spaniard might not choose to return it: and so it fell out.

A letter, written in English and in French, was now despatched to his excellency, requesting an interview at his earliest possible convenience. And, that I might fall as little short as possible of Spanish pomp, I gave my name and titles at full length: on which occasion, for the first time in my

life, I reflected on my godfathers, that they had not given me two or three names besides Edward; to have made me somewhat on a par in that way with his excellency of Porto Bello. I intrusted this letter to Drake, desiring him to deliver it to the governor with his own hand.

Soon after he went on shore, a boat with soldiers came along side of each of our two vessels, and the soldiers, very unceremoniously, were preparing to step on board. The cutter was the first to perceive their intention, while the boats were yet at a distance; on which Captain Thomson hailed the Porghee, to know how he should act. "Do not allow it," was my reply. The crews of the vessels then seizing their boarding pikes, prepared to repel the intruders. The Spanish officer, on finding he could not put his order into execution without violence, drew off and returned.

In the course of the afternoon I received a reply from his excellency, written in Spanish and in French. It was prolix, being replete with unmeaning compliment; but he could not, he said, appoint any time for an interview, until he knew the purport of it. A Spanish officer, who came back with Drake, delivered this note, by whom I returned a pretty sharp answer: — "If his excellency should refuse an interview with an officer, who came as *chargé d' affaires* from the British government, it must be considered as an insult to the crown of England; and I desired to know what he meant by attempting to send Spanish soldiers on board His Britannic Majesty's vessels."

The time was, and not many months ago, when

I should have feared to incur the displeasure of my government, and receive a reprimand, for thus upholding the honour of my country; but I now knew that his Majesty had made up his mind, in spite of Sir Robert Walpole, to take hostile steps against the Spaniards, if they persisted in their aggressions and insults; I was therefore induced to follow the bent of my own feelings on this occasion. The Spaniard, however, had been too long accustomed to lord it over us, to care any thing for my threat; nor did he deign to make any explanation respecting the attempt to put soldiers on board. I must confess I felt excessively chagrined at the haughty and contemptuous conduct observed towards us; and not a little vexed, also, at having failed completely in my mission. My Eliza perceived my vexation, and regretted that it was a case in which kindness from her could give but little consolation.

We remained nearly two days without receiving any further communication from the governor. In this interval we had learned, by a piece of paper given to one of the midshipmen while on shore with the boat, that there were five masters of English vessels, and one merchant and his wife, confined in a small tower about four leagues to the southward of Porto Bello, not half a mile from the shore. This information seemed to give me new energies, so that I immediately sat down and wrote again to the governor, stating what had come to my knowledge, and demanding that the people should immediately be given up; referring him to his instructions from the king of Spain, bearing

date January 10th, 1732, wherein he was directed "not to molest nor abuse, nor suffer to be molested nor abused, by any of His Catholic Majesty's subjects, the English, or any of their ships;" and I desired to know whether I was to understand that he refused the interview I had requested, on behalf of my master the King of England. To this communication, he replied, "that the people incarcerated, had been caught trading within the Spanish seas without a licence; and that the vessels, therefore, had been condemned, and the people put in confinement: that he found this exception, in the circular to governors, to which I had referred, and therefore, he would not give up the English demanded. And as he thought it would be acceptable to the king his master, not to give encouragement to English ships of any kind, or on any pretence allow them to come into the ports of Spanish America, I had permission to depart as soon as I might think proper." This was enough. I had received my dismissal; and with it a general answer to the requisition I had come to make, which, of course, included the two particular captures I had been sent to represent, and for which I was to ask restitution. His Excellency Don Francisco Martinez de Retez had settled the business on which I came, without knowing it. But he was moreover ignorant of the good English fare he had missed, by his abominable conduct, and also of what was to follow.

On receiving my dismissal, no time was lost in getting the vessels under weigh, and we stood out to sea. The sea breeze soon died away after we

got clear of the port; and as we lay becalmed, a canoe came along side in the middle watch of the night, from Point Cocal, with three English sailors and the master of a brig, which had been taken some weeks ago by the Spaniards. It was the master himself who had sent the note to us, having trusted it to a woman, to whom he gave his only shirt for taking it. Drake called me up, the moment these people came on board, who soon gave me every particular respecting the persons incarcerated; and the situation, and slightly guarded state of the place of their confinement. I instantly determined to release our unfortunate countrymen if possible, and speedily sent for the commander of the cutter, to confer with Drake and myself on the measure. It was soon settled. A boat from each vessel, well armed, were to go in; that the business might be done effectually and at once, before any alarm could be excited; Drake and Thomson volunteering to go themselves on the expedition. Drake took the master of the captured brig, and one of his men with him; the other man going in the Seagull's boat, the canoe in which they came being now set adrift. About three o'clock in the morning, a light breeze came off the land, when the vessels were enabled to stand along shore to the south west, in the track of the boats. During this time, one and all of us suffered under the greatest anxiety for the fate of our adventurers, as well as for the daring adventure itself, it being altogether an irregular proceeding; so that failure, and capture of our brave fellows, would certainly be visited by barbarous severity on the part of the Spaniards;

and by a pitiless condemnation, from our own government. But when the day dawned, we were relieved from our fears; the boats were seen a little distance from the shore, pulling towards us, now again lying becalmed; and by the help of the glass we could discern several persons with them, beyond their own number. On making this discovery, we rejoiced in the success of the generous undertaking, and the boats reached us just as the sea breeze set in. The whole party of strangers were then put on board the Porghee; and without loss of time both vessels filled, and stood to the northward, lying their course for Seaward Islands.

Five masters of merchantmen, one supercargo, and a Dutch merchant and his wife, had been rescued. The accounts these people gave of the barbarous treatment they had experienced at the hands of the Spaniards, were shocking to civilised society; and the circumstances under which they had been taken, and their vessels condemned, would have been an outrage against the independence and dignity of the lowest power in Europe.

If Seaward Islands had not lain directly in the track to Jamaica, I should not have determined to go there in the first instance; being desirous of furnishing government with the mass of evidence now in my possession against the Spaniard, without delay. But as a copy of my correspondence with the governor of Porto Bello, would suffice to show the feeling that existed, practically exemplified by the appearance of persons rescued from an imprisonment inflicted in the face of treaties and political justice, I did not consider it requisite to

go myself to Jamaica; therefore I had determined to land at our own place, and send the Seagull forward with my despatches.

We arrived at our own anchorage, on Wednesday the 2d of November; and I instantly set about writing my despatches, while the poor unfortunates were invited on shore, and supplied with clothing and all other necessaries. The Dutchman and his wife seemed much distressed, and the account they gave of themselves was this: — They had got together some little property at Bonaire, with which they intended to return to Amsterdam, and retire. But a great part of it being in European goods, taken in payment for debts, the unlucky fellow conceived a plan of making a voyage to the Spanish Main, to a place where a smuggling business was carried on between the Spaniards and the Dutch; but although he succeeded there in converting much of his goods into dollars, he was laid hold of on the sea by a guarda costa, and the sequel we know. This man's name was Van Kempen, and a very honest fellow he was: his wife, also, was of a better order of Dutch women; and seeing their forlorn condition, without money and without resources, my ever kind Eliza proposed to me to offer them an asylum, until they could communicate with their friends, and see their way to the next step in life. This unfortunate couple received our offer with much thankfulness, declaring it would be a second saving of them, to allow them to remain with us. The three rescued seamen not being at all necessary at Jamaica, or in England, to the proving of the case, were also induced to remain

with us, and ship themselves in my brother's schooner; this accession enabled me to take out the two lads, and Martin, to be permanently attached to the Avon. On Thursday, the Seagull sailed for Jamaica, well supplied with turtle and vegetables; taking on board the five masters, the supercargo, and my despatches for the governor and commodore.

There had not been any fighting, in rescuing the prisoners from the tower in which they were confined. Our fellows caught the guards napping, whom they awoke with three cheers; the Spanish soldiers took to their heels, as soon as they could get upon their legs; and so weak was the outer door of the place of confinement, that one of the seamen literally made a breach in it, something in the same way that the lion treated the knight of La Mancha.

Notwithstanding the happy result of our expedition, in rescuing our imprisoned countrymen, and the exultation it occasioned generally amongst us, yet I could not help continuing to feel much chagrined at the insulting conduct of the Spanish Governor, and at my total failure in accomplishing the object of my mission. My dear Eliza observed this with deep regret, and took every opportunity to satisfy my mind that there had been nothing wanting on my part. That if the king's ministers had shown half the zeal and firmness in preserving the honour of the crown, that I had done on the late occasion, the insults, which I was now so deeply lamenting, never could have occurred. "And, indeed, my dear Edward," continued she, "I do say

it in honesty, that you did all a man could do under existing circumstances; for which circumstances, you are in no way responsible." In this way she would talk to me day after day, whenever she perceived me brooding over the subject. At length she completely succeeded in her endeavours to compose my mind, and set my feelings at rest respecting it.

In a few days I turned my attention to the affairs of the settlement. Doctor Gordon's house was finished, and he had commenced moving his furniture and other things from the storehouse, which he had brought out with him from England. My brother being now about to send his vessel to Jamaica, with the merchandise he had obtained from the Dutch trader and Spaniard, I sent an order by it for lumber, and other building materials, as much as she could carry. The doctor's family having now left Peccary Field, my brother very kindly received Mr. Van Kempen and his wife to take up their abode with him; and he found in these strangers useful, if not agreeable, inmates. The husband spoke English quite intelligibly, and possessed great knowledge of commercial affairs, as connected with this part of the world especially; and, moreover, the wife being a notable woman, and a resident for many years in the West Indies, instructed Mrs. Seaward in many things of no small importance as to the management of her house, and the produce of the grounds. Our new Dutch friend was of great use to me, too, not only in communicating with the Germans, but also in pointing out the best modes of directing their in-

dustry. He soon made himself master of our situation, and saw the great commercial advantages to be derived from it. He was frank, but respectful, in his communications; and ventured to say, that if there were more merchants there would be more trade. My brother, however, would not agree to this proposition, and at no distant period began to look on the Dutchman with a jealous eye. But his arguments were nevertheless convincing to my mind; and as I felt certain that my brother's success in life could not be injured, I resolved to give a facility to every person that chose to embark in trade, or in any other business, except tavern-keeping, at the settlement.

Van Kempen approved entirely of my project to establish a manufactory for straw hats from the palmetto; and he suggested, also the cultivation of the Indian arrow root, as there were fine runs of water to prepare the flour from it, which brings a great price in Europe. And besides, he was sure the German sausage-maker could make capital sausages of the turtle, if he were well supplied with spices; and if these were packed in jars, or small casks well covered with lard, they would sell not only in Europe, but even in the West Indies. So by these means, and others which afterwards would present themselves, he thought the industry of the people might be made relevant to the original stock of the island, and some wealth, however little, acquired. But without resorting to this principle, he said, whatever the people gained, I or my brother must lose. The Dutchman evidently understood his subject; and therefore, notwithstand-

ing the reluctance of my brother, whose views were narrow, only for want of knowing better, I determined to be guided in all my measures by the principles which had been so wisely stated and explained.

Our Sabbaths continued to be duly kept, our muster days observed, the school regularly attended, and the people daily occupied in their respective callings and avocations. When my brother's schooner returned, the carpenters and bricklayers were set to work on the house I had planned on the northern part of Allwood's Bay. Drake had twice visited the Spanish Main, near to Cape Gracias a Dios; and during the second time, succeeded in procuring a family who understood, in perfection, the making of plait, and fine hats, from the leaves of the palm-tree; and when he brought them to us, they were accompanied by a large supply of the material which he had collected, but of which we had an abundance on our own islands. The vessels of the colony were laid up in Peccary Creek during the short period of the stormy season; and after the rain ceased, the whole strength of the settlement was engaged in putting in roots and seeds for the ensuing harvest. Spanish vessels arrived now and then with merchandise, and dollars, of which my brother made a good account. Van Kempen kept the German women at work, with their wheels and distaffs spinning cotton, by which more thread was furnished than our weaver could consume at his loom. At the school-house, the time of the children was divided between learning to read, and learning the

straw work. Besides these new matters, a considerable quantity of the "Arundo Indiana radice esculente," was planted in January; and also an apparatus made, consisting of boxes communicating with each other by hollow bamboos, to be ready when the plant should attain maturity, to convey the water to wash the grated root, and to receive the amylaceous deposit which constitutes that rare article called *Indian arrow-root.* Thus a system of general industry was instituted, and, at no distant period, carried into productive operation.

On the 10th of February 1738, we received the melancholy intelligence of the death of our most excellent and amiable Queen; which was communicated by a letter to my dear wife from Lady Sundon. I will not attempt to describe the affliction this information occasioned. It was a day of sorrow I never can forget.

In March, the house at Allwood's Bay was finished. In the contemplation of its completion, I had sent the Porghee to Jamaica; and as furniture is not merchandise, I then requested Drake "to bring me such things as I thought I should require for this my intended country *château!*" On his return, the house was put in order, with all the neat and convenient furniture he had brought; and, when all was completed, I took him over with me to Allwood's Bay, to look at it. We both admired the situation in which it was placed, — the front looking towards the sea, — having a screen of finely wooded hills forming the back ground, as if to shelter it from the January storms. "Indeed, Sir Edward," said Drake, after we had gone

through the halls and other rooms, "I think you will like this place so much better than the mansion at the fort, that you will make it your constant residence." — "I don't think that is likely, my dear friend," I replied, "but at home we shall hear what some one else may say on the subject." We returned to dinner, and my Eliza met us in the piazza. Drake began a eulogy to her on the château, the moment we came in. "I am well pleased," she replied, "to hear that you are so much delighted with the place, and I am not the only one that will feel happy in your being so." This was a puzzler for Drake. "I am at a loss, Sir Edward," said he, looking earnestly at me, and perhaps somewhat astounded, "to make a reply to my friend, Lady Seaward, for she is not used to pay compliments." "She means what she says, my dear friend," I rejoined; "she and I are both happy that you are delighted with the place. The house was built and furnished for you, and not for us; and I desire you will accept it as a mark of our regard." His surprise now increased his perplexity, so that for some time he was unable to make any reply. At last he stammered out, "My friend! my dear friend!" — then rallying a little, smiled and added, "your great kindness has given me courage to ask a favour." — But here again his courage failed, and he could say no more. But my kind-hearted Eliza took up his theme for him. — "You would say," added she, taking him kindly by the hand, "I should not only wish to call you friend, but brother! — Is that the case, my dear Drake?" I

exclaimed, "is this the favour that so much embarrasses you to express? If you and another person, desire it as much as I do, there will be no impediment; and I believe you may be happy." The brave and tender feelings are seldom severed. The gallant Drake could not restrain the tear that now glistened in the sunshine of his eye. My dear wife made no delay in communicating the subject of our interview to Maria, and had the happiness to add another joyful heart to the present hour.

On Sunday the 19th of March, the nuptials were performed by the Reverend Mr. Rowley; after which, three couple of our domestic negroes were married; and several black children baptized, besides all the adult people who had not undergone the rite of baptism. The whole population was entertained in the afternoon with flour cakes and coffee, and cigars. After which, the happy couple, attended by Rosalie for the occasion, and two of my wife's domestic women, Clara and Hebe (whom she desired my sister to consider in future as her own servants) were rowed over to their residence by Master Diego in his barge; which he requested to be permitted to have the honour of doing, rather than allow it to be done by the white sailors of the yacht.

In the course of the week, visits of congratulation were made. And my dear wife sent a supply of goats, and poultry of every kind, to the *château* to stock the place. I now thought this a fit time, though out of the ordinary course of doing such things, to tell Drake what I intended to give my sister, now his wife. And I gave him a memo-

randum, whereby I engaged myself to settle 2500*l.* upon her and her children, with the usual conditional provisions. "And now, Drake," said I, "you and your wife will have to sign this instrument, as well as myself, by and by, when it is drawn up agreeable to legal forms: but you may perceive, I hereby give you nothing, excepting that I enable your wife to pay her mess." — "And a very good mess," he replied; "it will enable us to keep, with my pay, and the Penn; for all which you are entitled to her husband's best thanks, at least." — "That is very well, on your part, my dear friend," I replied, "but not enough on mine: — you want two or three young negro men to keep your grounds in order, and I have none to spare you; and there are many other things you will need, notwithstanding all that has been done for you."

On an early day, when Drake and his wife came to take a family dinner with us, I called to my Eliza, as she and my sister, Mrs. Drake, were talking together in the piazza. "Do you think, dearest," said I, "you can find five hundred dollars for Drake, to set him up in the world?" — "Yes," she replied, "a thousand, if you wish it." — "That's well," I exclaimed; "bring them forth, if you can carry so many, and he shall have the thousand, — a joint present from us to our gallant friend, on this happy occasion." Drake bowed, but said not a word; and walked into the piazza to his wife. When the bag of dollars was put upon the table, I called them in, and gave it to him, with the best wishes of my dear wife, and myself, for his

prosperity and happiness. My sister kissed me, and, in a broken voice, thanked me for what I had done for her. At this moment my brother James came in. "Just in the nick of time, brother!" said I; "fellow this bag, if you please, with some of your Spaniards' dollars: it is a wedding present from us to Drake." — "I cannot afford to give as much as you, brother," he replied: "if I give half that you do, I think I shall not do amiss." —"I do not desire you to do so much." I rejoined. — "Oh yes," returned he, "I shall have no objection to give half what you do." — "I do not desire that you should do that, dear James," rejoined our sister; "for Edward has settled 2500*l.* on me for my portion; and this bag of dollars is a present to my husband." On hearing this, James felt himself in somewhat of a dilemma, endeavouring to extricate himself by saying he would pair the bag; but Drake declined accepting it, saying, he already had quite enough; and his pertinacity in the business exceeded that of my brother, so nothing more was done; but we endeavoured, notwithstanding, to pass the day in good feeling, and with some little hilarity.

The society of Mr. and Mrs. Rowley, and their two dear little girls, was so agreeable to us that we could not desire to part with them; and they being perfectly contented with their situation in the mansion, the building of a parsonage house was yet deferred. In the interval of time I allowed to pass without making a daily record of occurrences, many minor arrangements had been made and carried into execution: among which is an extensive

circular shed, covered with thin boards, extending forty feet every way, put up by the carpenter and seamen of the Porghee, around the base of the great silk cotton-tree; radiating from the trunk of the tree at an elevation of fourteen feet, and terminating at its circumference, at an elevation of eight feet, resting on thirty-two wooden pillars, answering to the thirty-two points of the compass. And it was under this magnificent canopy, that the people were regaled on the celebration of my sister's marriage.

By the advice of Van Kempen, some houses were to be built between the barricado and the spring, so as to come close upon the woodland region. There were to be twenty in all, and to front each other, intended to form a street; ten of which were to be placed with their backs to the west face of the promontory, and ten with their backs to the black rock; leaving a space of sixty feet wide between their fronts; the street to extend four hundred feet. These houses were intended for shops and such like, and to be built on a small but convenient scale. And without demurring on the matter one way or other, the eight carpenters and two sawyers, and the bricklayer and his apprentice, were set to work under the superintendence of our Dutch friend, to accomplish, as speedily as might be, this somewhat formidable undertaking. Indeed, my brother had become tired of Van Kempen and his wife, so that they were glad to look forward to the occupancy of the first of the houses that might be finished.

Early in April, Drake sailed for Jamaica with

the yacht, and took his wife with him. In less than three weeks he returned, having purchased two new negro men and two girls. He brought letters from the Governor, and others also from England. My friend Commodore Gunman had been recalled, and in his stead Commodore Brown was appointed to the command on the Jamaica station.

Our affair at Porto Bello had become a matter of public importance; but the parties concerned in it, I mean the two naval officers and myself, narrowly escaped the most consummate disgrace. The arrival in England of the rescued captains, happened just at the time when the whole country was pouring in petitions to parliament and to his Majesty, complaining of the outrages of the Spaniards. At this crisis, Sir Robert Walpole was doing every thing in his power to smother the complaining voice of the people, by throwing doubts on the truth of the many representations that were set forth by the petitioners. Therefore, when these rescued prisoners arrived, the minister was desirous of keeping them out of the way. But the secretary of state being obliged to lay before his Majesty the Governor of Jamaica's letter, which comprised within it a copy of mine to him, containing a report of all that had passed at Porto Bello, the King's attention became fixed on that point, in spite of Sir Robert's shuffling to divert it, and he ordered the five masters, and the supercargo, to be examined before a committee of the privy council. The result of this examination, led to measures of strong remonstrance on the part of our government

to the Court of Spain; and to do the Duke of Newcastle justice, he was glad of it. But this only made the prime minister more angry with me, calling me a rash and obstinate blockhead: he also seized an opportunity to advise his Majesty to appoint Colonel Hervey to the government and command of my islands; and at the same time took occasion to request permission, to instruct the Lords of the Admiralty to order Lieutenants Thomson and Drake to be tried by a court martial. The King, however, indignantly refused to do either of those things; saying, "If I could do this, sir, *Philip* may very soon spit in the face of my ambassador, for his pastime! But no one shall hurt *Seaward;* no one shall hurt *Drake;* no one shall hurt *Thomson!* All men! Sir Robert Walpole, all brave men! and I speak for *them.*" — This information came to me from Lord Harrington, who was present at the interview. And he further stated in his letter to me, that when Sir Robert retired, the King spoke to him (Lord Harrington) on the subject; on which the noble lord reminded his Majesty, that I was the person whom her late Majesty had knighted. On hearing this, the King called Walpole "Dog!" and expressed great indignation at the persecution intended us.

Yet, notwithstanding the royal favour, the Governor of Jamaica had received a reprimand, through the secretary of state, for sending the mission to Porto Bello; and I had the honour of a similar state compliment, for what I had done there. I was much vexed at this business; and I confess, if I had not received, with the official letter, a kind

and friendly communication from the noble Harrington, the affair would have occasioned me serious distress of mind.

After the rainy season in May had come to a close, and the consequent cultivation finished, I resolved to go to Jamaica, to have a conference with the Governor; and hastened to make all necessary arrangements, for carrying forward the works of industry and improvement, in my absence. Drake, in consequence, received orders to hold himself in readiness; being desired to lay in a good sea-stock, and not to neglect taking on board some English fare for presents; such as had been vainly carried with us to Porto Bello, as I intended to touch at St. Domingo, as well as at Curaçoa. For although I knew foreigners now began to despise us for submitting to the insolence of Spain, yet I had reason to believe that our flag was still sufficiently respected, both by French and Dutch, to secure at least a courteous reception to a person of any pretensions, holding a commission from the King of England.

As I proposed visiting Curaçoa before my return, Van Kempen requested to accompany me. My sister Drake also was to be of the party, as we had some business to do at Jamaica, in which she was the person specially concerned. With these, and my dear wife, and her *fille de chambre;* leaving Fidele with Mrs. Rowley, we embarked on the 5th of June, after having devoted the previous day to a more than ordinary devout observance of the Sabbath, the blessed sacrament having been received by us, and all others of the colony, who were

deemed capable of comprehending its import and comfort.

Nothing can be more agreeable than being at sea in this climate, at this season of the year; and the superior manner in which the vessel was now tacked, and otherwise managed, by the white seamen, added to the pleasantness of the voyage. Not being pressed for time, we kept the open sea, speaking several vessels for our pastime; so that we did not make Jamaica till the ninth day.

At noon the yacht anchored off Port Royal. The Shark was there, and Captain Townshend immediately paid me a visit. We soon talked over all the Porto Bello business. He censured his uncle freely, saying — "a general disgust was felt on the subject of the reprimand sent out from England." He was highly delighted, however, when I told him what the King had said, although I would not tell him how it came to my knowledge. "Let me repeat this to Lieutenant Thomson, when he comes into port?" cried he; "it will be worth a galleon to the poor fellow, for he fears his promotion is stopped." — "Do it," said I, "and welcome."

On Wednesday we anchored off Greenwich, and paid our respects to the new commodore; proceeding afterwards to Kingston. Here an attorney was quickly set about preparing the deeds for my sister's settlement. Then leaving Drake to take care of his man-of-war, I, and my dear wife, with his wife, and our handmaid Rosalie, paid a visit to Spanish Town, where we were most kindly received by the Governor and his lady.

During the few days I remained, Mr. Trelawney and myself discussed pretty freely the conduct of the minister, on the late business at Porto Bello; also his general pusillanimous conduct with respect to the Spaniards. His Excellency was well pleased to hear the King's sentiments respecting myself, and the naval lieutenants who were implicated in the late affair; to which he gave implicit credence, although I could not disclose my authority. He said, laughing, — "That is just the King's way." When I repeated, "Nobody shall hurt Seaward; nobody shall hurt Drake; nobody shall hurt Thomson;" — "That is sō like his Majesty," continued Mr. Trelawney, "that no one could mistake it." In the course of conversation, my dear wife and Mrs. Trelawney frequently lamented over the memory of our excellent Queen; of whom the Governor's lady told many anecdotes, that were highly to her honour. While I was here, I saw the two Indian chiefs from the Mosquito shore, who had returned with two hundred Indians, to assist in putting down the Maroons. I thanked them for the present of the deer and turkeys, and made the more substantial acknowledgment, of presenting each of them with some money. Before I took leave of the Governor, I requested him to procure three artillery-men, as gunners to the fort at Seaward Islands; and a drum and a fife also, that is, a drummer and a fifer for the train-band; all of which he kindly promised to do, on the return of the yacht, whenever that might be. And having received letters from him, to the Commandant at Cape François in St. Domingo, and to the Governor of

Curaçoa, we took our leave, much pleased by his attention and great kindness.

On our return to Kingston, the deeds of settlement were executed; making Mr. Perry, and my brother, trustees for Mrs. Drake. I now wrote a letter to the former, informing him of the circumstance, desiring him to lay out 2500*l.* in government four per cent. annuities, in his name, and the name of Mr. Seaward, for her benefit; and having written the letter, I showed it to Drake, and with his consent the deeds and the letter were forwarded to Mr. Perry.

We sailed again on the 20th, and beat to windward for several days, making Cape Tiberoon in St. Domingo on Sunday the 25th; and on Friday we had the pleasure of coming to an anchor at Cape François, having seen the most beautiful scenery that can be imagined, as we stood along shore. The fortifications were imposing; and the town, which stands on the starboard hand, looked well. There were many vessels at anchor off the town, besides three line-of-battle ships, and several smaller ships of war, at anchor beyond it.

I sent Drake on shore with my letters; from which mission he soon returned, accompanied by an officer of rank, and a polite invitation from the Commandant. I made my visit without the ladies, attended only by Drake; and as I went in uniform, we were received with an officer's guard, a drum, and presented arms. I confess I was highly gratified with this reception from the French, especially after the insulting treatment I had received from the Spaniards.

On the following morning, the Commandant returned my visit; and as we had no guard to receive him, he was saluted with thirteen guns from the yacht, which, after a while, was returned by a fort on our quarter. He invited us all to dine; but Lady Seaward intimated she could not accept the invitation, without previously receiving a visit from the Comtesse d' Anvers, the Commandant's lady. It was therefore arranged that we should go on shore to the hotel to dress, and that the Comtesse would make the visit before the dinner hour, and then send her carriage for the ladies.

This visit of ceremony was made. But there is not much ceremony with a Frenchwoman even of quality. The Comtesse talked of every thing, and to every body; was charmed with Rosalie; desired she might be allowed to attend her mistress; chatted to the girl as if she were her equal, joked with her, and said things that none but a Frenchwoman would say, and none but a Frenchwoman could like to hear.

However, we had a most kind and unrestrained reception at Government-house, and sat down to dinner with a numerous and elegant company. The removes were rapid, the conversation more so. I looked round me with astonishment: the Frenchmen contrived to eat and talk incessantly, without losing a word or a mouthful. There was a bottle of wine, and a decanter of water, placed between every two persons, with tumblers to each, but no wine-glasses, of which they all drank freely. Those near me frequently saying, "Sir Edward! — *Un coup du vin! il faut boire!*" then putting a dash

of wine into their own tumblers—"*A votre santé!*" and in this way I was compelled to empty nearly the bottle that was placed at my right hand, in drinking with my challengers. I trembled for the consequence, although the wine was weak; looking forward to a hard set-to after the departure of the ladies. The whole party, however, sat nearly three hours, with the cloth on the table; and to my surprise, when the bottles, and tumblers, and other things were removed, a cup of coffee, without cream, was handed round to each person; after which, small glasses with liqueurs were presented; and with this conclusion, ladies and gentlemen rose together, retiring into a large saloon, where cards and music were provided for the entertainment of the evening.

It gratified me exceedingly to witness the attention my dear wife received from every one. The politeness of the Frenchmen in their behaviour to her, carried with it a respect such as I had never seen before. But the ladies exhibited a different sort of manner; they examined every article of her dress, and descanted on it freely. She bore this rudeness with great good nature; and it was pleasing to me to hear her converse with them in French, without difficulty or embarrassment. La Comtesse admired "mi-lady's" diamond necklace; to which, on this occasion, she had suspended the royal cross. "*C'est superb ce collier-ci!*" exclaimed the Comtesse.—"*Vous êtes une bonne Catholique, miladi; n'est ce-pas?*" continued she, smiling; the next moment pushing her face into my wife's bosom, to kiss the diamond crucifix. My dear

Eliza made her no reply. The appeal involved two subjects of deep interest, to that bosom on which the bauble rested: — her much-loved lord, — her dear departed Queen: subjects not to be named before the gay and thoughtless. If she had made any reply, it would have been a sigh or a tear.

I met Commodore De Roquefeuille at the Commandant's dinner; from whom I afterwards received a visit at the hotel, when he invited the whole party to visit his ship L'Achille. On our going on board, I was received with a guard and a salute of thirteen guns. My Eliza took great delight in witnessing these honours paid to her husband; not having yet forgot the mortifying scorn with which he had been treated by the Spaniard at Porto Bello. I must confess, however, that I was not favourably impressed either with the discipline, or the cleanliness, observed on board the French ship. The men were standing or lying about, *hail fellow well met*, among the officers; and the decks neither clean nor clear.

After having made these our visits of ceremony, we remained a few days longer at Cape François; living agreeably at the hotel, where we had the comfort to find good baths, and were rather surprised to learn that they were in general use throughout the island of St. Domingo: a luxury not known at Jamaica, unless at the Decoy, and perhaps a few other places belonging to persons of delicacy and taste. Cape François, like Kingston, is built regularly; the streets being in straight lines, intersecting each other at right angles. But the superiority of the French shops, induced us to visit

them frequently, and purchase some trifles, such as hair-powder, scented soaps, and other perfumery, a few fans, and a variety of the like toys and nick-nacks. There we should have shut up our purses, had not Rosalie found out some elegant point and blonde lace, on which the ladies expended 100 dollars.

When on the eve of departure, Monsieur le Comte sent me six cases of superb Bourdeaux wine; and, in return, I begged his acceptance of as many hams, and two double Gloucester cheeses, for which he thanked me by note, saying they were highly acceptable.

On Wednesday the 5th of July, we put again to sea, beating to the eastward along the northern shore of St. Domingo. In four days we doubled Point Caronge and in a week more got fairly into the Mona Passage, the same strait by which my dear wife and myself had entered the Caribbean Sea, when on our first voyage from England. As we here passed Cape del Engans, a Spanish man-of-war brig was seen in shore of us. He hoisted his colours, and made sail towards us; but as we had no inclination to hold any intercourse with him, the yacht stood on her course; and having the wind a-beam, and a fine breeze, the Spaniard dropped astern quickly, and gave up the chase. We steered hence direct for Curaçoa, distant about five hundred miles nearly south of us, and without accident or interruption made that island on the 19th of the month. As our vessel rounded Fort Amsterdam, to pass into the harbour, we could almost shake hands with the muzzles of the guns;

while on the other hand, I observed a chain lying on a rock opposite, ready to stretch across, for the purpose of securing the entrance against any hostile attempt to enter the port: although so narrow is the passage, yet the harbour is fine and capacious within.

Poor Van Kempen jumped as high as a Dutchman could jump, for joy, as we passed the Fort. The instant the anchor was dropped, a boat went on shore, to say who we were. Salutes were then fired, and arrangements made for my visit to the Governor. This piece of ceremony was also soon performed. His Excellency Mynheer Van Spengler, not having quite recovered from a fit of the gout, received me in his big chair. I made my visit short: and he sent an officer of rank to return it; who brought a message, inviting us all to dine at Government-house the next day.

On the morning of that day, taking Van Kempen with me, I waited on his Excellency, by his own request. I then told him as much of the Porto Bello story, as a conservator of English honour might be supposed to do; to which part Van Kempen bore ample testimony. Mynheer Van Spengler listened with sparkling eyes to the account of the rescue of the prisoners; getting fairly up upon his legs; then turning to Van Kempen, struck him on the shoulder with a familiarity that rather surprised me, at the same time saying something to him in Dutch: on which Van Kempen fell on his knees, kissing both hands of the Governor. "I have got 4000 dollars for this fellow," said his Excellency to me, "from the Spaniards,

on account of his vessel they captured. When we heard of this capture," continued he, " and also of two others, our frigate went out, and, by way of reprisal, brought in a Spanish vessel, with the Governor of Santa Martha on board, returning to Europe. They remonstrated, and desired to be released; but I told his Excellency Paternos, that when they released our vessels, or paid for them, they should also be released; but not till then. And as I chose to make a sure bargain, and get something, if I did not get the whole value of our captured vessels, I ordered the amount of manifest to be furnished by the Custom-house, and the probable value of the hulls estimated: for which amount his Excellency Don Gonsalvo de Moncada Paternos paid down the money, and he was then allowed to depart. This is our way; and the attack you ordered on the tower near Porto Bello, is your way," continued the Governor of Curaçoa, laughing; " and such is the only way to bring those saucy dogs to their senses."

Before I took my leave this morning of Mynheer Van Spengler, he told me he had no wife, but that the Commandant's lady would be here to receive Lady Seaward and her sister at dinner; and that some of the ladies of the place were invited to meet them. Van Kempen soon left us, after having received the happy and unexpected tidings of his good fortune. He went to regale himself with a pipe, and to ruminate on his future plans of turning the dollar.

At two o'clock, Drake and his wife, with Lady Seaward and myself, went to Government-house.

I was received by an officer's guard: and there was besides a considerable display of ceremonious pomp. The Commandant's lady, attended by several others, greeted my wife on the steps, and we all walked into the first saloon together; where, to my surprise, I saw several servants richly dressed, some of whom were negroes, with pipes and cigars in their hands, and each with a lighted cigar or pipe in his mouth. As the guests passed, they were offered these odoriferous tubes by the servants: we, of course, declined accepting any; but the Commandant's lady, and another, and several officers, who came in quickly afterwards, each took either a pipe or a cigar; not appearing very nice whether it had come from the servant's mouth, or not: and when we arrived in the second saloon, the greater part of the company collected there were also smoking. However, these favourite fumes became suspended for a few minutes, immediately on our arrival, to give time for introducing the company to us; after which they recommenced with fresh vigour. In about half an hour, servants came round with silver ewers and basins; the smoking then ended, and water was poured over the hands of every one that chose, and a clean napkin presented to dry with. Old Van Spengler hobbled off with Lady Seaward, as well as he could; I took the Commandant's lady; he gave his arm to Mrs. Drake; and my worthy captain escorted a noble looking *vrow*, fat as a duchess, the wife of Mynheer Henkledorft, the fiscal of Amsterdam.

The dinner was more in the English, than the French style; yet some of the dishes were French,

and the cooking excellent. We did not rise after dinner, as at Cape François, but drank in the English fashion. There was an abundance of Hockenstein at dinner; also Spanish and French wines, both then and afterwards. The ladies soon left us, when I began to fear that both Drake and myself would succumb under the rude pressure of Dutch hospitality; the health of the King of England, their high Mightinesses the States General, and all the great men of both nations, being toasted in bumpers. There was great festivity, but little ceremony observed at this part of the entertainment; so I was right glad when we were allowed to leave the table and join the ladies. We found with them some additional company, and an execrable band of music in full clangour. The *contre-danse*, too, was in full operation. Most of our dinner party fell in; but some fell out, and more than one fell down. Drake and myself sat very quietly looking on, endeavouring to sober ourselves by silence, quietness, and coffee.

On the following day we made a boat-excursion to the further end of the inner harbour, to the country-house of the Fiscal, where we dined; and had an opportunity of seeing a little of their rural economy. Indeed, there was no lack of hospitality; for during all the remainder of our stay at Curaçoa, we were the guests of some one or other among the principal officers of the place, having only to complain of too much of it.

At the great dinner given by the Governor, and at every other place we dined, it was regretted that they could not treat us with London porter after

cheese; which circumstance I did not forget on my departure, taking occasion at that time to distribute six hampers I had brought with me among our friends.

Van Kempen told me, the day after our visit to the Governor, that he had made up his mind to purchase a galliot, which was for sale, and carry on a trade from Seaward Islands; if I would promise him my protection, so as to compete fairly with my brother, and any other merchant of the place that might come there. I gave him that promise, and he in consequence bought the galliot, and laid in a cargo; when, at my request, he purchased for me a few cases of old hock, a quantity of fine tea, some spices, and other things, which were sold here at a much lower price than at Jamaica or in England. I was obliged to wait nearly a fortnight for Van Kempen's vessel; in the course of which time the yacht made an excursion with the Commandant's family, to the little island of Amba; where I obtained a fine Cape of Good Hope ram, with a tail like a Cheshire cheese, and two ewes of the same breed. Van Kempen took with him two families; one of which were Spaniards, cigar-makers; the other Dutch boors of Curaçoa, from the country, skilled in preparing cassava bread from the root of the *manioc;* and also that valuable article, flour from the Indian arrow-root.

On Tuesday the 1st of August, we loosed from Curaçoa with the galliot in company. And as that vessel sailed well before the wind, the passage was made in seven days, a distance little short of one thousand miles. — On Wednesday the 9th we de-

scried *Drake's Head*, the promontory of George's Island; at the same instant saw broken water showing itself at no great distance from us: a sufficient demonstration of the danger of approach to these islands. In a couple of hours we saw the colours go up on the height; and at three o'clock in the afternoon, came to an anchor off the Fort, after an absence of seven weeks.

All our friends were in readiness on the beach, to receive us when we landed: foremost of the first was our dear little dog, who sprang from the side of Mrs. Rowley, and lying down amongst our feet, alternately licked the one and the other, actually uttering cries of an inexpressible ecstasy. Diego and his wife Rota followed with their welcome, and all their heart was in it. I could not but feel, that the tie which bound them so closely to us, should also bind us to them. "Kind Mistress Rota," said my Eliza, as the old negress embraced her knees, "rise, and kiss my cheek; for I love you as a child would love its nurse." — The good woman rose, but kissed the hand of her mistress, saying, "The blessing of our God upon my lady!" — My dear wife now took my arm; and although the people were crowding round us, she whispered to me — "Dear Edward, did you hear what Rota said? All I have seen, and all I have heard, since we have been away, has not afforded me such heartfelt pleasure, as the kind and pious greeting of that good old creature."

My brother could not conceal his chagrin, when he was informed that the galliot belonged to Van Kempen; nor could any thing I said to him on

the subject, put him in good humour. I was sorry to observe this; but having no sinister object in view, I resolved to act with kindness to my brother, yet with strict justice to every settler in the colony. After a while, however, he seemed to take some interest in the detail of our voyage, on which I had entered with our good friend the parson; the ladies, the while, having congregated in the piazza; where my sister Drake was holding forth on all the extraordinary things she had seen at St. Domingo, and Curaçoa.

In the morning I visited the rising village, where I found Van Kempen's wife in all the transports a Dutch woman may be capable of exhibiting, at the good fortune of her husband, yet busy in making preparations for the people he had brought home to her. There were only two rooms, and a small central hall in her house, so that it would be impossible, with any kind of comfort, to lodge these two families. But, perhaps, Van Kempen's wife did not care about comfort, if she could but manage the thing in any way. However, I saw the difficulty, and told her the new comers should have the adjoining house, if her husband chose to take it; with which information the lady was much pleased, and expressed her thanks in the best English she could muster, on the occasion.

On my return to breakfast, Diego requested to know what he was to do with the broad-tailed sheep, which, for the present, he had turned into the woodland region with the deer. I told him, I thought he could not dispose of them better; therefore to allow them to remain.

After breakfast, I went into consultation with my dear wife, on the state of the colony. I saw, with deep regret, the elements of strife introduced; and I stated to her my misgivings on the subject. After some conversation, she said, — "Straight forward, dear Edward; follow the dictates of your own mind, which are just and upright. Call the gentlemen together to-morrow; explain your views, and avow your sentiments, and make your pleasure known to them: you are not bound to consider the humour, nor the particular interest of any one, not even your own brother, in opposition to your public duty. Take the King's motto, '*Dieu et mon droit*,' and you cannot do wrong." Thus spake my Minerva; and I resolved to follow her advice.

On the following day, I summoned my brother James, Mr. Van Kempen, the parson, the doctor, and Captain Drake. I said all that I thought was requisite to convince my brother, as well as every other person present, that justice and impartiality, and the good of the whole population of the colony, and the duty I owed to the King and to myself, were the principles on which I desired to found all my proceedings. I then stated, that the time was now come to make some arrangements and regulations, which hitherto had not been necessary. I signified, in consequence, my intention of putting a duty of *one per cent. ad valorem* on all goods sold, bartered, or landed in the islands: out of which a colonial fund should be made, for the purpose of paying the clergyman, the doctor, the soldiers, and the artillery-men shortly expected, and other public expenses. But on exports, there would be

no duty. I then informed my brother James, he must build a storehouse for himself; and I gave permission to Van Kempen to do the same; adding, that until they should complete their buildings, I would allow both of them to warehouse their goods in the government storehouse.

Before we separated, I was glad to see my brother take Van Kempen aside; soon after which they asked me if I would permit them each to build storehouses within the palisadoes of the avenue to the Cave storehouse. I did not hesitate in acquiescing with the request; but with this reserve — "I must have a ground rent from each of you, of fifteen dollars a year." To this proposal they agreed.

I now requested Drake, to send us some men, to assist in clearing one end of the great storeroom, for Van Kempen's cargo. And thus ended our meeting; during which my brother and Van Kempen had become friends, because the measures I had taken, seemed to bear hard on each of them, and on them only. In consequence of which I suppose my brother intuitively directed his attention to Van Kempen, as the only person present likely to sympathise with him, in being made to contribute so largely and unexpectedly to the expenses of the island establishment.

On muster-day, the Saturday following, after a grand display of firing and field exercise, I held a general meeting of the people, to whom I repeated some of the fundamental laws of the settlement. And I then expressed my wish, that all tradesmen should live in the village; and purchase provisions

with their earnings, from those who have no trade beyond the produce of the earth. In conclusion, I said, that it gave me great pleasure to observe the progress many of the children and others had made in the manufactory of plait and hats; and I ventured to hope, that in a short time we should have abundance of money circulating among us, and every comfort we could desire.

On Sunday the 13th there was a full meeting of the colony at prayers, under the spacious canopy erected beneath the towering shade of the venerable and gigantic silk cotton-tree. It was highly satisfactory to witness the devotion of all present, and the great good order and cleanliness of old and young, Protestants and Catholics, Spaniards, Germans, Dutch, English, whites, blacks, and mulattoes — a motley group; soldiers and sailors, artificers and husbandmen; yet one flock, under one shepherd; brought, and kept together, by the unity of that spirit in which alone we may hope to find a bond of peace.

Early in the ensuing week I sent for Doctor Gordon, who had long established his character in my mind for scrupulous integrity. I told him it was my wish he should take upon himself the office of fiscal to the colony, the duties of which I explained to him in a few words. After the consideration of a day or two on his part, and some more explanation on mine, he agreed to accept the commission, with a salary of 200 dollars a year; which, added to his medical stipend, made up a comfortable income.

Towards the end of the month, the fruits of the

earth were got in; Drake sailed for Jamaica; my brother's schooner returned from Virginia, with lumber, and flour, and some other merchandise; Captain Taylor arrived in the Mary, from Bristol; two Spanish schooners, from the main; and Van Kempen's galliot sailed, in company with the Mary, to the Bay of Honduras. The carpenters, and sawyers, and masons were kept constantly at work; the storehouses were in progress; and something was continually doing to the houses of the village. Good Mr. Rowley gave strict attendance at the school; and the business of making plait and hats, went on industriously. The German women were not idle; they produced a good deal of yarn, and no inconsiderable number of stockings; and the weaver's loom was kept going.

In September, Van Kempen's boors turned out some excellent Indian arrow-root flour, and they made cakes, twice a week, from the *manioc*, which were sold at the village. Van Kempen bought plait, hats, stockings, or any thing else that was offered for sale; and he sold whatever could be wanted, from a needle to an anchor, from a skein of thread to a bale of cloth, and groceries of all kinds. There was abundance of small money in circulation; and thus the commercial wheel had been set going, and it promised speedily to bring grist to the mill.

On Drake's return from Jamaica, he brought with him two bags of cotton-seeds, by Van Kempen's suggestion; which, subsequently, were planted throughout the sheep-walk on Edward's Island; the soil and situation being well adapted to the

growth of cotton; and, in consequence, the sheep were removed to East Field, a fine pasturage opposite the Turtle Islands. The Governor sent me, by this opportunity, three artillery-men, all married men, two of whom had families, the other none; also two mulattoes, young free men, tolerably well trained to the fife and drum. I was glad of this accession to our military corps; for by his letters, as well as others I now received from England, I saw many reasons to expect that we must soon come to blows with the Spaniards.

The artillery-men were located in the village; but the two mulatto young men were lodged with Diego, and appointed to attend on me at the mansion as servants, when not called out on military duty.

Towards the end of the year, Allwood the younger, Hart the mason, Herbert the tailor, Gerrard Onder the weaver, William Gortz the pork-butcher, Pablo Ximenes the straw-man, Piedro Nomez the cigar-maker, occupied houses respectively in the village, and my two sawyers, with their wives, occupied another. Van Kempen possessed two, and one had been allotted to the artillery-men. The elder Allwood retained his lot and house at Edward's Island; and as he seemed to have set his heart on it, I would not insist on his removing to the village, nor adopt any measures of rack-rent to force him to quit his original dwelling. The two New Englanders had left my brother's schooner, and now took up their permanent residence at Allwood Bay, where Purdy, also, was located; and Jack Martin, with his family, had been added to the number. So that Drake had for his

neighbours, his old companions, the original crew of the Porghee. Their old captain supplied these men with a boat; and at his request I rented to them the turtle fishery of the islands, on condition that none were to be exported without licence; and for every one brought in, they were to pay one dollar to the fiscal, and supply Gortz the butcher at one penny per pound live weight; whose price to the settlers, was fixed at half a rial; thirty-two of which pieces amount to one dollar. Gortz proved a very useful member of society, although I remember when I thought his trade could not be made practicable in the island. He bought live pigs, killed and sold the meat; goats also; and now and then I ordered Diego to sell a sheep to him. I bought all my meat from him, which was a great accommodation, as no sort of animal substance could be kept well in this climate beyond one day after being killed. Gortz was a capital fellow at making sausages, not only of pork but turtle, and being well seasoned, they were much esteemed: but Van Kempen was out of his reckoning in expecting to make them an article of export; for with all the spices that could be given to them, they uniformly spoiled in a tropical climate within a fortnight after being made.

From the great quantity of work that had been done, the carpenters had received large sums of money. Old Allwood bought two young negro men at Kingston; and the younger Allwood bought a woman; and Xavier bought a young negro man. But these purchases were made under the recognised law of the colony, that after seven years' ser-

vitude, they were to have their freedom; and all children born in bondage, to be made free, on attaining their one and twentieth year. My brother, also, had purchased six new negro men, and four girls; and these new servants were brought from Jamaica, in the Tom Cod early in December.

In consequence of these accessions, I removed Xavier, with Hachinta his wife, and master George, the first-born of our islands, together with the apprentice Matthew, whom I had placed with Xavier, to the lot at Edward's Island vacated by Hart the mason, now removed to the village. Xavier was my old friend, and I was happy in an opportunity of conferring on him a kindness: I gave him the house, and allotment of land, in perpetuity, for the consideration of one head of Indian corn yearly. My dear wife participated in the pleasure of settling our old friends so comfortably; and seized on the occasion, to express her wish that something might be done for our most faithful servants and friends, Diego and Rota. But these excellent people were too useful, and even necessary to me, to be alienated from us; we therefore agreed to give them a salary of one hundred dollars a year, and a handsome suit of clothes annually.

When these intentions were made known, Master Diego and his Donna were much gratified: perhaps more by the mark of our regard, than by the reward that accompanied it. Yet nothing less than my old blue and gold uniform coat, remade into something of another form, would satisfy Master Diego; to which the old cocked hat, with a cockade, must be added. These were for days of

state, and I rather expected he would desire a peruke also. My dear wife gave one of the negro girls to Mistress Rota, to keep her house in order; and it was now thought right to disencumber them of the two mulatto lads; who were, therefore, turned over to lodge with Derrick and his wife; then occupants of the house at the other corner of the poultry-yard.

The fiscal's receipts had been considerable, especially from the one per cent. duty *ad valorem;* and the impost on turtle, also, had contributed some hundred dollars. Seeing this, I determined to advance the pay of the soldiers: and accordingly I gave Craig a halbert, with serjeant's pay; and made Andrews and M'Nabb corporals; the other, Finlayson, remained a private, and assistant drillman to the train-band with an extra sixpence per diem. I found it necessary, also, to give each of the artillery-men sixpence a day besides the King's pay, to enable them to live; as their wives and children had not as yet been able to learn the plait and hat work, sufficiently well to add any thing considerable to their support.

Thus, something like a system was established; and that solitude which my dear wife and myself trod alone five years ago, had become the busy haunt of men, producing all the necessaries of life abundantly. All living creatures had increased amazingly; and the products of the earth were more than the colony could consume. The fruit trees, which our own hands had planted, bore fruit in many places. Plantains and bananas had become plentiful; pine-apples were no longer a

rarity; melons were thrown, from their superfluity, to the pigs; and Indian corn was little used, except in feeding the poultry. Manufactures, on a small scale, had been commenced; and a lucrative commerce had found its way into our harbour. All the people were getting money, which no longer was drawn from my private resources only. Our laws were few, but wholesome; and we desired to make our holy religion the rule of our conduct. In consequence, the population was healthy, orderly, industrious, and contented.

On Monday the 25th of December, all the people of the islands assembled by previous summons, to attend divine service under the sacred canopy of the great tree. After which they betook themselves to the isthmus; nearly half a mile of which, at this season of the year, is thrown into shade soon after mid-day by the promontory; where a variety of amusements were set on foot, — our isthmean games! Asses were made to run races, and Drake's sailors were the jockies. Some planks had been pierced in their centre, and placed on a pivot, with their ends connected by pieces of board at equal distances, so as to form a large horizontal wheel: the boys and girls, and some of the younger negroes, got on them, and were whirled round with more or less velocity, to their great delight. The drum and fife kept the dancers going; and to regale the whole party, my dear wife had taken care to provide tea and coffee, and lemonade and cigars in abundance. We gave a grand dinner at the mansion, and a royal salute was fired from the Fort, in commemoration of the Nativity. The day

was made a day of joy to ourselves, and to the people.

The following Sabbath, brought the year to a close, when we returned thanks to Almighty God for all the blessings he had given us to enjoy.

CHAP. IV.

In January the rains were heavy, but unattended by those horrible storms to which we had been accustomed; yet every precaution had been prepared to secure the vessels, and the buildings, against their expected violence. Advantage was taken of the season, to put in the roots and seeds, and other articles of husbandry growth; I myself undertook to graft and inoculate several of the fruit trees, with cuttings or buds from those approved plants I had re-received two or three years ago from Jamaica in tubs: and February saw us rest from our agricultural labours, throughout the island; but in the course of which I had assisted Van Kempen with Diego's men, to plant the Indian arrow-root and cassava: and I desired Nomez, on the present occasion, to make a large sowing of the sweet-scented Vanilla peas, against any tree excepting the fruit trees, so that the vines might run up; he having obtained a bag of them from one of the Spanish traders, for the purpose of mixing with tobacco when put together for mellowing: with this improvement to our unrivalled tobacco, he bid fair to turn out the best cigars in the world. The other settlers were able to manage their own business.

On the 14th of February, Drake sailed for Jamaica. And during this month, four Spaniards, one French, one Dutch, and two English vessels

arrived in St. George's Harbour; for so I now denominated it. Sale or barter was the object of these vessels, and both they and our merchants found the trade to their liking. But I was most gratified, in seeing the ready vend Van Kempen had made for the straw hats, and yarn stockings, and the other little manufactured things, products of our island industry. My care was to preserve peace and order, and prevent the landing of spirits. Doctor Gordon, as fiscal, was faithful to his trust; and took special caution to collect his duties without vexation or embarrassment to the traders; the amount of which soon exceeded all expectation.

In this month we had an accession of four families from Charles Town, Carolina. They were English emigrants, who had sailed from Hull, with an intention of going to Georgia, but did not reach it; for having met the captain of my brother's vessel at Charles Town, where they had been obliged to put in, he persuaded them to accompany him to Seaward Islands, instead of persevering to go forward. I settled these people at Soldiers' Town, excepting one family sent to occupy a vacant house at Allwood's Bay.

Early in March, Drake returned from Jamaica, bringing letters with him that had arrived there from England. The accounts we received from Awbury, and Hartland, were of the most comfortable nature; and not less so a letter from Perry and Co., enclosing a statement of my accounts. It appeared that I had now a balance in their books of 5476*l.* On quitting England two years ago, I had left in their hands 4503*l.*; since that period, they had received

for interest on my stock, 3708*l.* Mr. Goldsmith had remitted to them in the two years 800*l.*, being half the rents of Hartland; less, 50*l.* Besides, I had credit for 160*l.*, being interest of the money left floating in their hands. I had drawn, since I quitted England, 3695*l.*, including the amount of the settlement made on Mrs. Drake. Such was the state of my account: yet, I thank God, it has neither been by meannesses, nor by exactions, that my circumstances were brought into so flourishing a condition.

In April a Spanish guarda costa chased a small French schooner upon our coasts, that had been carrying on a smuggling traffic in the Gulf of Darien, and drove her among the rocks of our outer reefs, to the southward. On its being discovered by Craig at the flag-staff, he fired a gun, and hoisted the colours, supposing that the schooner was English. The Porghee got instantly under weigh, accompanied by the Avon. It, however, happened not to render assistance to the schooner, but to the Spaniard, for he, being the larger vessel, struck upon a shoal, over which the other had passed; and by the time the Avon got alongside of him, he was throwing his guns overboard, and preparing to cut away his masts: but the Avon took out one of his anchors, and they hove him off.

The Frenchman, the while, ran up close to the Porghee, and requested a pilot to take him into the harbour; but Drake very wisely advised him to stand out again to sea, and pursue his voyage, his enemy being no longer in a condition to follow

him; and as most likely it would be necessary to bring in the Spaniard to refit, their meeting in the port might be attended with some unpleasant consequences. The Frenchman profited by the advice, and made the best of his way, having told what he was and where he had been, not concealing that he now had twelve thousand dollars on board. But the prize escaped; and the guarda costa, leaking apace, was glad to come into our harbour to be repaired.

When it was reported to me that the Spanish vessel was approaching, I ordered the bugle to be sounded, and the train-band to be put under arms. I did this merely for the sake of appearance, wishing to impress the stranger with a respectful idea of our situation, though perhaps our wall of rocks and reefs was our best defence. On the vessels coming to an anchor off the Fort, I perceived she was of a large class, being pierced for twenty guns; I therefore ordered the captain to be received with a guard; and I then thought it proper to dress myself, and those about me, in a manner suitable to the occasion. In a short time he was introduced by Drake. Master Diego, being attired in the old suit of blue and gold, stood behind my chair in waiting, ready to officiate as interpreter. After many compliments from the Spanish captain, and an assurance on my part that his ship should be speedily repaired, I desired him to be seated; and finding he spoke French, I dispensed with Diego: then, after some general conversation, and a further assurance of rendering him efficient service, I requested his company at dinner.

Diego, who was always at hand on these occasions, came in on being called. Before I had time to speak to him, the Spanish captain, who now was on his legs, addressed him thus: — "Senhor Diego! I have the happiness of being your namesake. — "Don Diego!!" replied my sable friend, bowing low and courteously before he answered. "I am much honoured; but your Excellency has many other names, no doubt, besides Diego." — "No, indeed," answered the caballero, "only Freza." — "I like you for that, good master," replied old Diego; "I never knew very good people have very many names." I now ordered Senhor Diego to attend on Don Diego, and to inform me as to any thing he might wish to be done. Drake and the Spaniard, with the Spaniard's namesake, now took their leave, and set immediately to work to arrange matters for repairing the bottom of the damaged ship.

When they were gone, I desired Sergeant Craig to signify to the people, that they must all do military duty so long as the Spanish vessel remained: I told him, also to keep a full sergeant's guard constantly at the plank house; from whence a relief of sentinels, at the landing place, at the Fort, and before the mansion, were to be supplied night and day; and to plant the two field-pieces before the palisadoes, with an artillery sentinel; and to fire the gun at the flag-staff, every evening at sunset; and to beat off with drum and fife, night and morning at the Fort. Such was our display of military matters, and they were punctually attended to.

Two large tents or booths were erected on the

isthmus, for the men belonging to the guarda costa; and he was requested to plant his own sentinels in charge of them. A newly finished house in the village, was appropriated to the captain and officers for their accommodation; and not only these gentlemen, but the crew, were supplied daily with fresh provisions, and vegetables in abundance. In a few days the ship was hove down at the black rock; and putting on Derrick, and the carpenter of the Porghee, in addition to the Spanish carpenter belonging to the guarda costa, a new plank was soon put in and calked; and the ship again fitted, by the help of Drake's crew, within ten days, and made ready for sea, to the no small surprise of the Spaniard at such despatch of business.

Before his departure, he offered to pay for what had been done, and for the supplies he had received; but I declined allowing him to do so for either. On going away, however, he made Drake a magnificent present,—no less than a box of cigars, worth about five dollars! which my noble-minded friend very properly turned over to his carpenter. On the 23d, the Spaniard was escorted out to sea, clear of the reefs, by our boats; of which I was heartily glad, having been subjected to great inconvenience by his visit. But on the departure of this Don, we resumed our usual peaceful and industrious occupations.

Early in May, my dear wife and myself proposed making a regular visit to every place in the islands. On Monday the 7th, we commenced our "*Progress*," as it was called in the days of good Queen Bess. But instead of travelling with a large

retinue of courtiers and retainers, my sweet vice-queen, and her maid of honour Rosalie, myself, and Master Diego, with our faithful little dog, were intended to constitute the whole *cortège*. Early in the morning, just as the day had dawned, our two mules were brought to the door; and the two asses also, which had been trained to carry Mr. Rowley's children. They were gorgeously caparisoned with a velvet back cushion, and a richly-fringed bridle, for the occasion. The lady and Rosalie were soon seated. I then mounted my mule, and Master Diego, in his best attire, bestrode the other; and thus in cavalcade, with Fidele running in advance, we set forth for the foot of the steep path that leads to the flag-staff on the promontory. We did not proceed direct for our destination, but turned off in the contrary direction, making a detour of the silk cotton-tree. If this were to be a journey devoted solely to feeling, we might have stopped here; there being food enough, without going further, to dilate the heart, and give birth to reflections at once the most delightful and absorbing; but we proceeded. On approaching the little spring where once Fidele and his mistress killed an iguana, he instinctively ran up to it. "It is there," said Diego, "where I first drank water here! and it was under that tree I took my first sleep! and they are as holy places to me, good master Sir Edward." — "And it was under that tree, Diego," rejoined my dear wife, "that your kind master, and myself, were sitting, when we first discovered you in the canoe; and it is an event I look back upon with a grateful pleasure."

We had now come to the north-east corner of the open ground, finding ourselves among the orange trees bearing fruit; and immediately after, among the shaddock trees in full blossom. "These are the groves, my dear Eliza," observed I, "which our own hands planted, when this was our paradise." —"And it is so yet," she replied; "are we not *both* still here?"—I well understood her allusion; and stooping from the back of the gigantic mule on which I rode, stretched forth my hand, which she caught, and pressed affectionately. Then pushing forward, we trotted along the margin of the slope; having the high crags above us on our left, thickly wooded with palm trees, but skirted below by the native Indian fig, and here and there a few orange and lime trees, we had planted some years ago. We rode in this direction for a quarter of a mile; the mansion, with its outhouses, and fort, being upon our right. This brought us to the southern extremity of the open ground; whence we proceeded along a fine beach, for another quarter of a mile, with a thick skirting of wood on our left; having a bold but barren hill, shaped like the head of a bald-pated man, nearly three hundred feet in height, rising abruptly over it. This brought us to the spot where the winding path, leading to the summit of the promontory, commences; that path which my dear wife, and myself, and Fidele had discovered, and indeed had partly formed, five years ago, when in search of our shipwrecked companions. Here we dismounted, to give Diego an opportunity of tightening the saddle-girths, to fit them for the ascent. And while he was so occupied, my dear

Eliza and myself visited the little bay beneath us; where we had landed in the punt on that occasion. Here we now sat down under the same tree, beneath which we then had placed our basket. The recollection of these events, ever dear to us, was now made doubly so, by being on the spot where they had taken place.

The girths being tightened, we all remounted our cavalry, if mules and asses may be so called; but they are the only sort of cattle that could achieve the rugged ascent. These sure-footed steeds never make a halt nor a stumble; the rider having no other care than to give the animal his head, and keep fast hold of the pummel of the saddle: and so we did; and thus we proceeded upwards at ease and in safety. It was pleasing to see the fruit trees on either side of us, as we ascended; the work of a few minutes of recreation, when my Eliza with her husband and her dog made her first ascent. We also marked the spot in our way, where Fidele had surprised the armadillo, now lost and almost forgotten. After a steady climb of half an hour, the party arrived at the flag-staff, where I found Serjeant Craig before us, on duty for the morning look-out.

At this commanding position we halted, and looked round in ecstasy, over land and sea, in silent admiration. But Rosalie could not long restrain her feelings on the occasion, whatever they might be. "*Voila!*" *dit elle*, "*tout le monde au-dessous!*" Her exclamation reminded me of one of our Germans, who cried out, "*Gortz Ueberhalb!*" when the pork-butcher climbed up the rock, after one of his

pigs. It must be confessed, however, that the association did an injustice to the sentiment of Rosalie: she alluded only to the expanse of earth and water, but the German dealt out a sarcasm, by double entendre—*Gortz above all the world.*

Having rested our animals, and satisfied our wandering and admiring eyes, we proceeded along the crest of the promontory, towards the isthmus. Something less than a couple of miles brought us to the edge of the precipitous face of the rock that overshadows the sandy position below, during the winter solstice; here we halted, looking with pleasure over the cocoa-nut grove, towards the cultivated grounds beyond the long extended neck of land, the fine grounds, of Peccary Field, and those attached to the soldiers' habitations. The Doctor's house and grounds, were concealed from our view by the high mass of rock that forms the eastern side of the Peccary Creek, and this gigantic object also prevented our seeing the school-room. We had a goodly prospect of German Town, from the flag-staff; but from this place, it also was screened from sight, by a finely wooded hill that lies to the west of Peccary Field, forming one side of the pass thence to German Town. Before we quitted this position, my dear wife and myself stretched our eyes along the reef, to the spot where, by the mercy of God, we had been delivered from the perils of shipwreck; and then, with one spirit, we lifted up our hearts to Heaven, and blessed God audibly, saying at the same moment, "Thou art gracious, O Lord!"

On our return the cavalcade surprised a large herd of wild goats, the product of some stragglers

from the tame goats below; but these had breathed the mountain air long enough to own none but the genius of liberty for their master, and therefore scampered off to their craggy dwellings, on the instant they perceived us. We had now a grand view of Allwood's Bay opposite to us, and Rosalie thought she saw Captain Drake and his lady walking: it might be so, for I certainly soon after discerned something like a blue and a white pigeon perched on the rock below his house; but as I had only a bird's eye view of them, I would not call in question the accuracy of our young handmaid's piercing glance or quick conjecture; and it is well I did not, for it turned out that she had been correct, —it was even they watching our return.

The forenoon was far advanced when we made our appearance at the mansion. Dear Mistress Rota had laid out a nice breakfast of fruit, and wine, and tea, which was in waiting for us; with which we refreshed ourselves; but being tired, we then laid down for a few hours to rest. During our repose,— for we did not sleep, — our attention was awakened by hearing Rosalie talk to Mrs. Rowley's little girls, sometimes in French, in which she had well instructed them, sometimes in English, describing to them all the wonderful events of the morning. The pass was impassable, the mountain was stupendous, the rocks were terrific, the *coup-d'œil* was sublime. Unfortunately there was neither *giant* nor *castle* to finish her romance. "*Mais assurement,*" *dit elle,* "*la montagne chauve soit la tête d'un géant avant le déluge.*" When I heard this I could not help exclaiming, "Bravo, Rosalie!"

on which she and the little girls set up a joyous laugh, and ran off from that part of the hall, which, for the credit of her story, was too contiguous to our door.

On the following day, the asinine cavalry were sent over early in the morning, in the Avon, to Allwood's Bay; and we soon followed in Master Diego's barge, having on this occasion a St. George's flag in the bow, presented to me by my friend Drake. My dear sister and her husband, attended by his old crew, and the other settlers there, received us with three cheers, which were as gallantly returned by Diego and his men before we landed. The first object that arrested our attention, was the fine growth and far extended double lines of the Barbadoes palm, planted by Diego about three years ago. It is a beautiful tree, the queen of all the palm trees, and not unfrequently attaining the height of one hundred feet. It is that palm with a swell in its trunk, which is to be seen introduced, on account of its beauty and magnificence, into most views of Indian landscape.

Our row across the harbour, had given us an appetite for breakfast; we therefore proceeded at once on foot to Drake's *château.*

As soon as breakfast was over, the same party set forward, mounted as on the preceding morning, Fidele being his own horse. We first made a detour of the bay, and were much pleased with the neatness of the people's grounds, and habitations, the abundance of fruit trees, and live stock. On finishing the circuit of the bay, Mrs. Allwood presented us with a bowl of goats' milk; and took that

opportunity of telling us, that, in spite of all her care, she could not prevent the Guinea fowl from running off in great numbers, and that, in consequence, she had no doubt we should see many of them in other parts of the island.

Having finished the circuit of the cultivated grounds, we directed our course to the northward; passing out from this settlement, round the foot of the conical hill, at the point where the beautiful little fountain pours forth; having on our right the large black rock that projects here into the sea, forming, with the beach a natural cove or snug boat harbour, directly under Spring Hill; and this was the rock on which we saw the two turtle doves, from the promontory on the preceding morning.

After riding through this narrow but romantic pass, we came suddenly out upon Long Bay, where the sheep had been placed for three years. A multitude of young cocoa-nut trees, planted in groups, had now grown up sufficiently high to give a pleasing appearance to a tract naturally dull in its aspect. As we rode along, Diego frequently stopped me, to observe the young cotton shrubs, some of which had attained a height of twelve to eighteen inches. "They grow fast now, rains soon come, sir," said he; "two year more, plenty cotton for all German women to make stockings." This remark of honest Diego gave an additional interest to the objects that presented themselves. A couple of miles brought us to the northern extremity of the bay, which terminates by a rocky *cul de sac*, enclosing some acres of very good soil, in which acacias were growing luxuriantly. But I was still more pleased

to see in this place the orange also, and the lime, planted no doubt by Diego's patriarchs, when they were sent round the island in a canoe, to put in the seeds of fruit trees and peppers in every spot fit for their reception near the shores.

Hence we made our way between the southern point of the horse-shoe rock, and a sand-hill; proceeding onward to the west side of the island, with the intention of riding southward as far as the high hills behind Drake's *château.* But we were soon stopped in our progress, by trees and underwood, extending from the lower hills to the water's edge. Parroquets were here in abundance, and some of Mrs. Allwood's gallenas, for any thing I know to the contrary, making a hideous screaming; then to our terror, Diego thought he saw a herd of peccaries, on which he very sagaciously dismounted, and took up Fidele with him on the mule. We, in consequence of this obstacle, retraced our steps; and arrived at the château time enough to dress for dinner. Here we were met by our friends from Peccary Field, and our worthy guests from the mansion.

In the cool of the evening the whole party visited the settlers, and did not lose the opportunity of making some little presents to the wives and children of the English emigrant family; to whom my dear wife also promised an addition to their live stock, and some other things necessary to their comfort. Before we returned, Drake took us to a natural grotto in the side of the conical hill. By accident he had discovered it in his rambles; and thinking it a pleasant cool retreat, had made an

agreeable walk through the trees to it, sloping gently upwards in a winding direction. It was indeed a delightful spot, with which we were all charmed; but my poor sister was rather too much fatigued to enjoy this enchanting termination of the walk, her situation being peculiar, and rather advanced.

When reseated over our coffee and a cigar, Drake explained to me a plan he had projected, of making a corkscrew walk up to the summit of the conical hill; he said it could be done by an ascent of one foot in twenty, extending the spiral line to the length of a mile, or thereabouts, from the base to the summit; which he truly imagined would educe a novel and beautiful effect from the surrounding scenery upon the eye, at every step of the ascent. We all returned by starlight to our respective homes; but the cavalry had preceded us, at the going down of the sun.

The following day we rested at home, being somewhat fatigued by riding, — an exercise to which we were totally unaccustomed. Early this morning, after my dear wife, and Mrs. Rowley and her children, returned from the bath, I accompanied them to the pen, to inspect the goats and poultry. She here took occasion to desire Abel to send a supply, not only to the new comers at Allwood's Bay, but also to those located at Soldiers' Town; to which many other things were added, by the same kind command, when the stock was despatched. The women were milking the goats on our arrival at the pen, previous to their being led forth by Abel to browse. It was surprising to observe the quantity

of fine milk that streamed from the udders of these little creatures; a large bottle-shaped calabash of which, was despatched by a canoe every morning to the further end of the isthmus for the children, and one was now ready filled to send away.

On Thursday morning, arrangements having been made for a general examination at the school-room, we arrived there at ten o'clock. Nearly every individual of the colony was before us; and the number of children under tuition now exceeded fifty, besides some women. The heads of the classes read to us, and they all exhibited their writing, which did much credit to Mr. Rowley, and to themselves generally. After this, specimens of their work in plait and hats were shown; on which occasion Van Kempen said—"The best proof that can be given of their success is, that they who some time ago could make a hat worth no more than one dollar, can now make a hat worth two dollars:" and to show his sincerity, he purchased some of their manufactures on the spot, at the high prices he named. The whole business was over by two o'clock; when the books and straw-work were removed, and the tables spread with plantain tarts, cocoa-nut cakes, pine-apples, melons, and oranges, for the refreshment and encouragement of our young scholars and straw-workers. Pablo Ximenes and his wife did not go without commendation; and, as a reward for their good conduct, they were now settled permanently in a house at no considerable distance from the school-room. My brother gave us a magnificent dinner at Peccary Field on the occasion, to which all the principal people in the

island had been invited, not excepting Van Kempen and his wife, whom I was happy to see there, and apparently on very good terms with their host: the duty on imports, and some other arrangements, had united them. Their interest having been made the same, their feelings soon became the same also.

By the additional strength of six negro men and four girls, that Mr. Seaward imported in October last, he had been able to cultivate a large field of tobacco, besides doing justice to all the other crops. Two of the women I gave him, had married to the two negro sawyers my bondsmen, which diminished his servants two in number; but he now had nine men and seven women; and as I saw he was putting them all to field labour, while we had but three negro women servants, independent of Mistress Rota and the girl my dear wife gave to her for an attendant, I therefore gave my brother a hint that he might return two out of the three remaining girls he had from us, which would make our numbers equal. Like a good and proper husband, he said in reply, that "he would consult Mrs. Seaward about it." In a few days after, she sent two of her *new* negro girls to the mansion, in lieu of the others, "whom," she said, "she really could not spare!" My dear Eliza only laughed at this manœuvre, saying, "Never mind; Rota will soon make them as useful as the others already are; but I am sure my sister forgot that the girls she has retained, will have their freedom three years sooner than those she has sent to us. I will remind her of it, if you please; and we shall then see how she will act." In the sequel, my dear wife did remind

her of it; and it fell out as she had anticipated. Our former servants were returned to us, and, agreeable to request, the two new negro girls sent back to Peccary Field.

The night after the school examination, was passed at my brother's; on the following morning we set forward, mounted and escorted as before, to make a visit to German Town. After riding through the plantation, which at this season of the year was in great beauty, we soon entered the pass cut by Diego and his men between the hills. On emerging from the defile, we suddenly opened the fine district occupied by the Germans. They had profited by the goodness of the soil and the aspect: their crops were highly promising, and their grounds in the best possible order. Their houses, and every thing within them, appeared neat, and clean, and orderly: the women were all employed either in knitting or spinning. The widow of Schneider lamented that she was entirely indebted to the goodness of her neighbours for keeping her grounds in order; and gave me to understand that Herman Brandt, one of Van Kempen's sailors, would marry her, if he might leave the galliot and live with her. I promised her my best services on the occasion; which, not many days after, I had an opportunity of rendering effectually; and Brandt took possession of Schneider's widow and allotment. Gortz's house and grounds were vacant, the stoccade of which was converted into a sort of piggery, his house being filled with wood and old casks. I therefore resolved to offer it to one of the emigrant families now at Soldiers' Town, there

being three families in two houses. In a few days after my return, this arrangement was carried into effect by their drawing lots; and the prize fell to David Empson, a worthy man with a wife and three children, one of whom, a boy of twelve years of age, promised fairly soon to become a good agriculturist.

Before I quitted the German settlement, we paid a visit to the tomb of the unfortunate man who had fallen a victim to intemperance, and contemplated his fate, I hope, with that compassion which is ever due from one frail mortal to another. From this spot we attempted the ascent to the flag-staff on the northern height of George's Island; but were obliged to desist, for here to us the pass really was impassable: so that the fancy of Rosalie was left at full liberty to see "in its mind's eye" whatever it pleased as to the wonders of the unexplored mountain. On our return, Matthew Hinkleman's wife, the Flemish woman, had prepared a welcome collation for us of roasted plantains, an omelet, and coffee; with which having refreshed ourselves, and made her a suitable compliment, we rode once more round the settlement, delighted to see the abundance of the goats and poultry, and the forward state of the fruit trees, besides a plantation of the cocoa or chocolate nut, that was expected to bear next year. By one o'clock we arrived at Peccary Field, and, being rather fatigued by our ride, reposed for an hour before dinner; returning after it, in the barge with Diego, to our own home.

These excursions afforded my dear wife and my-

self much matter for reflection, and even more for discussion. But there was one reflection, and one sentiment, paramount to every other,—the pleasure we derived from seeing ourselves successful in making so many happy, and the desire of seizing every opportunity, which the late survey afforded us, of adding to the comfort of such as we perceived in any way requiring our assistance or good offices.

Saturday was a grand field day at great guns as well as small arms. And on Sunday, after divine service, Brandt was married, as were also two couple of negroes; and five children were then baptized.

Early in the ensuing week, my dear wife and myself visited the village, and were entertained by Van Kempen's vrow with great hospitality. She showed us the progress they were making in the manufacture of arrow-root: and accompanied us to the house of Gerard Onder the weaver, Pedro Nomez the cigar-maker, and others, with whose success and industry I was much gratified. The carpenters had made great progress; there were fifteen houses finished, and some others begun. There was, notwithstanding, a regret mixed up with this display of colonial prosperity. The face of the place was changed. The beautiful stream of water, which we had discovered gushing freely from the rock, and where Fidele and our ducks used to drink and bathe delighted in its clear rill, was now covered in, or directed to flow unseen; a vessel was unloading at the rock, which before had stood in such romantic solitude; boats and canoes

were at the landing place behind it; people were going to and fro to the storehouses: the thicket was no more; its place was occupied by storehouses, field-pieces, and a kennel for our watch-dog: the wooden palace, once our pride, and our happy and silent retreat from labour, was now converted into a guard-room, before which the sentinel stood with firelock and fixed bayonet. — We turned our back upon this scene, with something like a feeling of self-condemnation at what we had done.

On entering the woodland region, the unchanged face of the hill, and ample shade of the surrounding trees refreshed our spirits; and as we lingered on the way, our four beautiful deer, with three pretty fawns, approached closely to us. With these we held communion quite to our taste; and during the hour in which we stood gazing on them, it brought back our minds to that tone of delightful composure, which to us constituted the chief charm of life.

Before the middle of the month, all the harvest that this season of the year produced was well got in; and soon after the rains fell in torrents for nine days. On the cessation of which, the agriculturist again put in his roots and seeds, trusting them with a perfect faith to Him who gives the increase.

During the month of June we frequently made excursions of a morning after the bath, taking Mr. Rowley's two dear little girls with us on the *borricos*, while my dear wife rode one of the mules, and myself the other. Our worthy parson, on those occasions, was content always to go in the canoe

that took the milk to the school-house, and return to dinner by the same conveyance.

A great part of every day was necessarily dedicated to the business of the colony, both by my kind-hearted helpmate and myself, to watch over the tempers, morals, and wants of the people individually, which required unremitting attention. Still we found time to read and to write; and my Eliza sometimes amused herself with enlarging the sketches she had made at different times of the places and objects which, on our first coming here, excited in us the greatest interest. We kept as much aloof as we could from the bustle incident to the arrival of my brother, or Van Kempen's vessel; or that which was always greater, occasioned by the coming in of a foreigner. Retirement was our delight, and we courted it as much as lay in our power. Our home was a happy home; Mr. and Mrs. Rowley were good and sensible; Rosalie and the little girls were joyous and merry; Fidele also contributed not a little to our pleasure by his attachment and attentions, and by associations, whenever he offered himself to our notice, that never failed to warm the heart with kind and otherwise delightful feelings. Thus our time passed agreeably, and I hope usefully, until an unexpected event called us forth to a very different scene.

CHAP. V.

A BRIG of war arrived in the last week of June, from England and Jamaica; which, by the way, was nearly wrecked in her approach to the islands. By this vessel I received orders to proceed to Porto Bello, and deliver letters to the Spanish Governor, from Sir Robert Walpole himself; and from the Spanish ambassador at London; the tenour of which was — "That amicable arrangements having been made between the two Courts, in January last, and a convention having been signed to carry the same into effect, Sir Edward Seaward, Governor and Commander of Seaward Islands, is commanded to proceed to Porto Bello, and *offer any apology and reparation required*, for the attack that had been made on a certain tower or fort there, by two of his Britannic Majesty's vessels, in October 1737, for the rescue of certain persons then in the custody of his Excellency the Governor of Porto Bello, which had in consequence been effected." My *instructions*, however (to which translated copies of the letters to Don Francisco Martinez de Retez were annexed) went no farther than 'to *offer a proper apology*,' and any reasonable reparation," for the alleged aggression.

On reading these despatches, every honest and manly feeling within me rose up in rebellion against this base and sneaking policy. I could not

but suspect that Sir Robert Walpole had seized on this occasion to mortify, if not disgrace me. I knew he hated me, because the Queen had been my friend; and now the more so, because his Majesty had promised me his protection. After I had read these infamous papers, silently, in the presence of Captain Knight, I retired into my wife's room, much agitated. My dear Eliza was already there, having left the hall on the captain's approach. I quickly communicated to her the business they commanded me to do. On hearing it, she was equally indignant with myself; saying—"I am sure such proceedings are without the knowledge of the King: I would not insult him so much as to think otherwise. Observe," continued she, "how this business is managed, to place you in the most unpleasant situation possible. The Spanish Governor is led to expect from you any apology and reparation he may desire; while you, by your instructions, are left to be the judge of how far you ought to go. Sir Robert Walpole must know that the Spaniard will demand what you cannot, either in fairness or in honour, concede; and that therefore one of two things must happen to you; either that you will fail again in your mission to Porto Bello, or that you will compromise the interests of your country and the honour of your King: so that disgrace is the only wages you can receive for going on the service required at your hands. Let Captain Knight," continued she, "do the business himself, if he please; but do not stain your name, my honoured husband, by such an embassy." — "I feel precisely as you do, my own

sweet angel!" I replied; "but I must not decide too hastily. The order is peremptory; and you may perceive it says — 'Proceed in your yacht to Porto Bello.'" — "That must never be done!" exclaimed my faithful and clear-sighted counsellor. "If the Spaniards get Drake into their hands, who knows but they may imprison him, if not hang him?" I was deeply impressed with this awful suggestion, and could only reply, that it was an infamous business altogether.

On returning to the hall, I requested Captain Knight to dine with me; and desired Drake who had accompanied him on shore, to be of the party; on which they took their leave, and left me to digest the bitter potion my friend Sir Robert Walpole had prescribed for me. After consulting with my dear wife for nearly two hours, turning the subject every way, and looking at it in all its bearings, at last we reluctantly concluded, that it was my duty to go to Porto Bello, and that therefore there was no alternative. But at the same time, I was so thoroughly satisfied of the truth of her suggestions respecting Drake, that I resolved to use a discretional privilege in leaving the Porghee in the offing, and to proceed myself into the harbour with the sloop of war only, until I should be assured that no hostile intention existed in the mind of the Governor towards my friend and his crew.

Having made my mind up before the dinner hour arrived, as to the course to be taken, I was pretty well myself again; but my dear Eliza could not so readily subdue her feelings of indignation against the minister; so that when his name came

on the tapis, she could not help breaking out with the following observation: — "If his Majesty has any fault, it is giving his confidence to a man who must be either a fool or a knave. But, indeed, all knaves are fools," continued she, "and such his whole conduct towards the Spaniards will prove him to be. The King, glad to get rid of him at any rate, will one day or other dismiss him, either with a fool's cap or a coronet." This explosion of feeling, at least the latter part of it, amused our guest a good deal; and being, perhaps, as little in the habit of disguising his sentiments as some other persons present, he laughed heartily. Mr. Rowley said, he could not condemn Sir Robert Walpole's policy, as it always had for its object the preservation of peace: and if the Spaniards were faithless, that should not be laid to his charge. My dear wife has too much respect for Mr. Rowley, to say any thing in reply to his remark; but she told me afterwards, that if any other person had offered such an apology for the minister, she would not have let it pass so easily. "Yet, my dear Edward," added she, "perhaps there is no one less capable than myself of forming a true judgment respecting Sir Robert Walpole, for I have long disliked him; and now, the only sentiment I can entertain towards him must be that of indignation."

On the following morning I saw Captain Knight, having deemed it proper to enter fully with him on the subject: I therefore made him acquainted with all the circumstances of the case; and concluded what I had to say, by signifying my intention to proceed in two or three days. He then told me,

that on his arrival at Jamaica, he received orders to hold himself in readiness to proceed with his despatches to Seaward Islands, and then return; but on the arrival of a frigate from England, he was informed that there was also another service for him to perform. At length he received his despatches for Seaward Islands, and at the same time was charged with a letter to the Governor of Carthagena. "I understand," said he, "the official letter goes crying *peccavi;* but I believe the whole business of these apologies to be a *ruse;* for I have received a Mr. Rentone on board, who came out from England in the frigate, by order of the Admiralty. He is instructed to make himself master of the localities of Carthagena and Porto Bello, and the adjacent coasts, with which already he is pretty well acquainted; and I am directed to give him all the facilities in my power. Surely," added he, "this looks something like an Irish apology — 'Coffee and pistols for two.'" — "I am glad to hear this, Captain Knight," I replied; "for I now feel strengthened in the determination I had made, not to compromise the honour of my sovereign and my country, by any dirty concessions in the name of the King; which baseness, I perceive, all parties by this time are pretty well convinced, tend only to increase the insolence of Spain and her officers, towards us."

It was then settled that I should accompany him first to Carthagena, that place being to windward, from whence we would go down together to Porto Bello. But I gave him to understand that I had resolved to leave the Porghee outside, until

I could discover the real mind of the Spanish Governor. When these important matters were arranged, I sent for Drake, and ordered him to be in readiness by Monday.

On Saturday we had a grand field day; and on Sunday, the captain, and officers, and the greater part of the seamen belonging to the sloop of war, attended divine service.

I could not dissuade my Eliza from accompanying me on this hateful duty. The more I pointed out to her the possibility of something unpleasant occurring, the more she persisted in her desire to go with me. In vain I pleaded my sister Mrs. Drake's critical situation. She only replied to this, that she would leave Rosalie with her, and that, besides, my sister would always have other kind friends at hand; but that her duty was to be always near to me. I could not but appreciate her affection, and therefore I yielded to her wish.

On Monday the 2d of July our trunks were put on board, in which I did not neglect to place some bags of dollars, and a few doubloons, lest I might find occasion for them. We embarked soon after, and with the first of the sea breeze sailed out of the southern passage; then, after a pleasant run of three days, we made Punta Galera, on the Spanish main, falling in with the land to the eastward, whence we reconnoitred its coast to the west for a couple of days; during which time, almost every day, there was a heavy fall of rain, with violent gusts of wind from the land. Notwithstanding the badness of the weather, the vessels rounded Point Galera, and stood into the bay; Mr. Rentone keeping a sharp look-out on

the line of coast, for some days. When off Point Canoa we stood out again to sea; and on the 12th stood in for Carthagena, and received a pilot. The vessels passed through the Bocca Chica (a narrow passage, with strong castles or batteries on either hand going in); then, after some awkward tacking, occasioned by the baffling winds and squally weather, the vessels in a couple of hours sailed with a flowing sheet into the inner harbour, passing through a channel much narrower than the Bocca Chica, and almost as strongly fortified; having a magnificent castle on the right, with fifty pieces of cannon, and also a formidable battery on the left. In a few minutes after passing this strait, or rather a large shoal that lies beyond it, we came to an anchor, Fort San Lezars bearing north.

The weather being unsettled, detracted much from the pleasure we should have received from the many striking objects that now presented themselves. The buildings appeared superb, the fortifications grand and imposing, the harbour spacious, and the country beyond luxuriant. In the course of a few hours a salute was fired by the sloop of war, and returned by the Castle. Soon after this, Captain Knight went on shore with his letter.

On his return, he came on board the Porghee, and told me the reply he received from the Governor, which was, that he would transmit the letter to Old Spain: his Excellency adding, that, however painful for him, he was obliged to desire that the King of England's vessels (now that they had done the business on which they came) would quit the seas of his Most Catholic Majesty. "This

was what the interpreter told me," continued Captain Knight; "but I am sure he did not tell me all; for I heard the Governor repeat, more than once, '*Ah, bellaco!*' and when the interpreter asked his Excellency what he said, he replied, '*No digo nada*,' — I say nothing. I suppose," added Captain Knight, "the old *Don* has twigged us, and he was muttering to himself, *bellaco;* which, I take it, means *war* in Spanish." — "I will tell you what it means when we get out to sea, my good friend," I replied; "but not till then."

Having made but a superficial reconnoitre of Carthagena, our two vessels were ordered to quit the port at daylight next morning. And accordingly, by break of day, several Spanish boats took the two vessels in tow, and we had the honour of being escorted by two of their men-of-war brigs, towed out in the same manner. As soon as we were clear of the channel, the boats returned, but the brigs stood out with us to sea. To get rid of these unwelcome companions, Captain Knight made all sail to the northward; and before night we ran them nearly out of sight. As the day closed, our vessels altered their course to south-west; and before daylight, we stood in again for the Spanish main, making the land in the evening. For ten days we reconnoitred the nearest shores of the Gulf of Dariene; during which time we saw several traders, — most likely smugglers, for they always ran from us; but it was not our object to speak with them. Another week was employed in looking at the coast between the Gulf of Darien and Porto Bello; and having effected this, our vessels

stood out at sea ten leagues from the land; stretching in again to make the Isle of Orange, to leeward of the port, so as to afford a full opportunity of observation to Mr. Rentone. This was on Thursday the 2d of August.

My dear wife and myself now went on board Captain Knight's ship, leaving our things behind in the Porghee, which immediately afterwards stood off to sea, while the sloop of war worked up to the entrance of the harbour alone. Knight now seized the opportunity to ask me what the Governor of Carthagena meant by the expression he had used? "He meant," I replied, "to call somebody *rascal!* but whether you, or Sir Robert Walpole, or his Majesty, I cannot tell." — "If I had known that, when my ear caught the expression," replied the honest seaman, his eye flashing with indignation, "I would have knocked him down, if I had been sure to hang for it." The trial of his mettle, poor fellow! was nearer at hand than he expected. On our arrival within the shot of Iron Fort, the Spaniards fired, and we hove to, our colours having been hoisted all day. Soon after, a boat came on board to demand our business; and the officer having heard it, answered, that his orders were to warn any English vessels of war, as well as others, off the coast; and he was sure the Governor would not allow us to go in. However, we might anchor where we were, until he should take in the letters sent from England; after which we should know the pleasure of his Excellency.

I received no communication from the Governor until the next morning. Our situation in the

night, from severe gusts of wind, attended by thunder and lightning, had been extremely unpleasant; but it was paradise to the situation that awaited us. Boats were sent at ten o'clock to tow us in, the wind blowing directly out of the harbour. We were brought to anchor near the shore, close to the town on its western side, under Gloria Castle. Preliminary arrangements were now made for my reception at Government-house; but the salute which Captain Knight offered was refused; at least they would not promise to return it, which amounted to the same thing.

My audience was fixed for the afternoon, after the great *Dons* had dined, and smoked, and taken their *siesta*. So, accordingly, at half past three o'clock, after receiving an affectionate and cheering word from my beloved Eliza, I accompanied Captain Knight in his pinnace on shore, where we were met by an officer, who attended us to the *Alcazar* or Government-house. We were ushered in here without the least respect; no guard turned out — no person whatever in the anteroom to receive us, but negroes in livery. The officer who had accompanied us from the landing place (it seems merely to show us the way) now walked into the audience chamber, desiring us to follow him. Here we saw the *great man*, and ten or a dozen other persons, in blue uniform with red lining, walking about. As soon as we made our appearance, three or four of them sat down. The situation in which we were placed thus became at once extremely disagreeable. I looked at Captain Knight, and he at me; but not a word was spoken for a considerable time. At

last, not under the influence of the best feelings, I addressed the Governor in plain English: — "Is your Excellency disposed to receive my mission in the spirit of friendship, — in the same spirit in which I am directed by the minister of the King of England, to wait on you?" To which I received the following reply, through an interpreter present: — "You are sent to me by the English Government as a culprit, to make apologies and restitutions for the insults and injuries, committed by people under your orders two years ago. — What have you to say for yourself?" On hearing this, Captain Knight stood forward, "with fire in his eye and defiance on his front." "Do you know, Governor," said he, "that you are speaking to Sir Edward Seaward, a person equal in rank to yourself, and holding most honourable commissions from his Majesty the King of England?" The interpreter was embarrassed; but did, I believe, explain faithfully. "Equal in rank to me!" was the Spaniard's reply; "I do not consider the King of England himself, equal in rank to me! — what is he? — he is little better than a Dutchman!" At the moment the reply was made known by the interpreter, the honest and gallant sailor broke out. — "You d—d blackguard! do you dare thus to speak of my King, in my presence?" The interpreter on hearing this, ran out of the room: Knight followed him, and brought him back, saying — "Tell him; d—n him, tell him what I said." By this time, the Governor and the other three Hidalgos were on their legs. The trembling interpreter repeated the exclamation of Captain Knight, in Spa-

nish. The Governor, without hesitating, then called in some soldiers, that were conveniently placed in an adjoining hall, and ordered them to secure the English captain. "*Tenez! tenez!*" said I, following up what I had to say, in French; "if you take this step, here ends the conference; and look *you*, Don Francisco Martinez de Retez, to the consequences; for you were the aggressor, by insulting the King our master." The soldiers stood off. "Then, sir," replied the Governor to me, "what is it you desire to offer, as an apology and compensation for the insult and injury we sustained at your hands?" — "What is it you desire of me, sir?" I replied. "You must ask my pardon for yourself," returned he, in the most contemptuous tone; "and the pardon of our most august monarch, the King of all the Indies, on the part of the King of England; and pay down ten thousand dollars as the ransom of the people you dared to take away." I hesitated for some time before I made a reply. "Surely, Sir Edward," exclaimed my gallant companion, "you are never going to comply with this!" I made *him* no answer; but as soon as I could make my mind up to the subject, seeing the situation in which we were placed, I said — "I will ask your pardon, *Don Francisco*, as far as respects myself, and I will pay you the ten thousand dollars; but so far from asking pardon of the King of Spain, on behalf of my august master, I tell you, that unless you ask my pardon for the insult you have just offered to the King of England, by what you have said, I have only to say to you, that I will depart." I spoke this in French: he de-

sired me to repeat it in English, which I did; and immediately on the interpreter giving it in Spanish, he ordered both Captain Knight and myself to be arrested. There were a dozen soldiers at this time in the hall, besides the officers waiting on the Governor; and although we repelled all manual insult, yet seeing that it would be worse than useless to offer further resistance, we allowed ourselves to be marched off out of his presence. We, however, could not believe that this savage was in earnest, to act so in contumacy of all established law between nations; therefore expected that after having thus shown his power over us, he would send us away: but we were mistaken; the guard lodged us in a horrible prison, in two separate cells, for they could not be called rooms, and a sentinel was placed at each door.

In a very few minutes after my incarceration, I felt all the horrors of my situation; but they had reference only to the distress in which this transaction must involve my beloved wife, and the dreadful uncertainty of what might ensue to her. And about this time I heard the firing of cannon, which added much to my embarrassment and misery. After a while, I wrote a note in pencil to the Governor; I wrote another to my wife; and sent for the keeper of the prison. When he came, I gave them to him, with a promise of reward should he deliver them safely and quickly: but they never were delivered at all. Two of the most miserable and sleepless nights and days ensued, without my being able to obtain the slightest information of my life's angel. I could not eat; I could not think; I

could not even pray; — all my faculties were benumbed, or absorbed in the sense of my present wretchedness.

At a moment when I was first inspired to raise my heart to God, my beloved wife burst into my cell, followed by the keeper of the prison as in pursuit. Speechless, fainting, and out of breath, she threw herself into my arms. Almost at the same instant, the gaoler, who followed close at her heels, laid hold on her by the neck: instinctively, I fetched him a blow with my clenched hand, that stretched him on the floor; from whence he arose, muttering, and departed. I closed the door after him as quickly as possible, and fastened it on the inside as well as I could. Our time was but short together: it was passed in tears, and embraces, and silence. The door, soon and suddenly, was forced open. The goaler and a body of soldiers as suddenly rushed in upon us. The miscreant I had struck, held a rapier in his hand, with which he instantly made a lunge at me, and wounded me in the side. The soldiers, at the same instant, seized my dear wife, and bore her away, leaving me no consolation but the hope that she did not perhaps know I was wounded. My wound was a blessing to me: it attracted my attention in some degree, and thereby gave some relief to the agony of my mind, which otherwise would have been intolerable. No one came near me all day. I bled a good deal; but I soon felt satisfied that the sword had not passed into my chest, but only through the outer flesh of the ribs; and I therefore ventured to hope, as I was likely to survive this violence, that

our God, in mercy, would in the end restore me to my beloved and faithful wife; and finish this awful dispensation with grace and blessedness;—"If not in this world," said I to myself, with a deep sigh, "certainly in the next."

I now fell asleep. After it was dark I was awakened by an officer, who had brought a surgeon with him. My wound was examined and dressed. I asked these visiters some questions in English, and in French, and tried the effect of a Spanish word or two that I happened to know; but I could get no reply. They ordered some lemonade, which was brought to me while they were present; and they then went away. The blood I had lost tended to cool the fever of my brain; I prayed to God for the preservation of my dear Eliza, and again went to sleep.

In the night I awoke to all the agonies of my situation; I fancied a thousand horrors, as to the fate and situation of my best beloved on earth. A fever supervened; and I recollect no more, until I recognised her one day, sitting by my side on a couch, in an apartment I had never seen before. On the return of consciousness from a state of delirium, I looked up at her with a sensation of overpowering joy and amazement, which, no doubt gave to my look the air of distraction. "Do you not know me, my own Edward?" she said, in a voice of anxious tenderness that went to my soul; at the same time stooping and kissing my forehead, as she was often wont to do in happier days. I could only press her hand, as a token of my returning sense, while the tears unconsciously rolled down

my cheeks. From this moment my eyes, which had been either red or glassy, began to assume their natural moisture and expression; and soon I became sufficiently alive to the past, to enquire what had befallen her; and then to ask about our companions, and the sloop of war, and whether any thing was known respecting Drake. To all of which she only replied,—"All is well, my honoured husband; we are in the hands of God our Father, who will not suffer his people to perish. When you are a little stronger, I shall have great satisfaction in answering you to all these, but not now." She then kissed my cheek, and gave me a dose of medicine, which the Spanish doctor had prescribed for me.

In a few days I recovered strength enough to sit up, and soon after to go to the windows. I felt no little surprise in seeing thence the town and harbour of Porto Bello, at a distance below me on the one side, and nothing but trees and hills in every direction on the other. My dear wife informed me that we were in a deserted monastery, to which the Spaniards had sent me, on some other persons being committed to the prison; that she, on being torn from me by the soldiers, had been conveyed to a nunnery; and that, on my life being despaired of, the Lady Abbess had made intercession with the Governor, through his confessor, to permit her to go to me. "And I bless God, my dear Edward," continued she, "that the living principle of Christianity is to be found among those who desire to be devoted to Christ, even among Papists."

My recovery was slow; for the place in which we were had been abandoned by the Friars, its former

occupants, on account of its unhealthiness. This solitude in the wilderness was almost always enveloped in a dense atmosphere until noon. Vegetation and reptile life seemed to claim the unmolested dominion of so sequestered a spot. No animals were to be seen; but the trees were most luxuriant, yet choked with every kind of underwood and weeds; while the serpents hissed, and the bull-frogs croaked horribly in every direction. Mosquitos, too, incessently buzzed around us; while the centipedes, and the scorpions, and the ants, disputed with us the possession of every morsel of food or fruit that might be put away for a future repast. One old lay brother and one negro woman had, indeed, been left to look after the place; but infirmities and indolence made either of little use. However, the kind ladies of the nunnery supplied us liberally with every thing I could desire; while my beloved wife watched over me with a tenderness that nothing on earth but the kind heart of woman can bestow. Yet the air was bad, and therefore every thing else was unavailing. My beloved, too, began to have ague, and to droop; on seeing this, the little strength I had acquired, gave way, and my heart sunk within me. Now humbled before God, I became calm and resigned, and seemed to feel no wish beyond that of being laid with her in the same grave, and meeting her in heaven.

When all appeared lost on earth, the good Lady Abbess, with the Governor's confessor, Padre Guircino, came to us with a *letiga*, and some mules, by which we were conveyed to the house of a fisherman near the sea. They had bargained with this

honest man for our lodging; who, together with his wife, received us in the kindest manner. My dear Eliza was carried on the *letiga*, or *lechiga*, a sort of bed, between two mules. She not only bore the journey well, but seemed to inhale new life as we approached the sea-shore. In a few weeks she was able to walk out a little; and my strength had considerably improved; but both of us still had ague; sometimes every third, sometimes every fourth day, in spite of *Jesuit's Bark*; with which we were most kindly supplied by the Spanish doctor, who continued to visit us occasionally. The fisherman's hut was situated about a quarter of a mile from the extreme end of Point Cocal, having a little bay on either side of it, as well to the northward, as to the southward. Some islands lay off the point; and shoals and reefs appeared nearly all round, finishing only about half a mile to the southward, where there is a small tower. In one or other of these bays, our kind host went early every morning, to cast his nets for sprats, which swarmed on the coast, and it was our amusement often to accompany him.

At intervals, during this period, my dear wife made me acquainted with the circumstances, as far as she knew, of what had taken place after Captain Knight and myself were sent to prison. Immediately on our arrest, soldiers were sent off to take possession of the sloop of war, but were repulsed by the crew. On which, Gloria Castle fired into her, and several of her men were killed or wounded. The brig instantly cut her cable without firing a shot, as she could not bring any of her guns to bear

on the castle, without firing on the upper part of the town; and at this moment a boat came off, to tell the commanding officer, if he did fire on the town, the Governor would hang every Englishman in his power. My dear wife, thinking alone of me, jumped into this boat, and the brig made sail to get out of the harbour; which she might have effected; but foolishly heaving to, to return the fire of Iron Fort, was hit by the shot: then falling to leeward, got on the shoals to the southward, nearly opposite, where she struck her colours, and surrendered. However, before the ensign was hauled down, she contrived to send off a boat with Mr. Rentone, in hope of falling in with the Porghee; and soon after, it is supposed, the brig filled and foundered. My dear Eliza had been escorted to the Government-house by the Spanish officer who conveyed her on shore. But even her celestial influence produced little effect on the savages who inhabited there, the Governor's wife included; so that all she could accomplish, was a permission to retire to a convent until the Governor might be pleased to release me. And it was on her way thither that she had been able, by the power of a doubloon, which she had in her pocket, to prevail on the persons who accompanied her, to go with her to the prison, and find out where I was lodged.

She had been told, moreover, that some English had some time ago landed in the night, about half a mile to the southward of Point Cocal, and there surprised a small tower, making the officer and guard prisoners; that the party afterwards pushed on for the town of Porto Bello, round the Block-House

Hill. But, being forewarned of their danger by approaching daylight, returned, without being able to accomplish their purpose. "This place, then," continued she, "was the scene of the exploit, and that tower we now see, the post that was surprised and taken." This she concluded to have been Drake. And it was in consequence of this, her informant said, that all the officers of the sloop of war were sent to share my prison. But I apprehend *Don Francisco Martinez de Retez* did not require any motive beyond his own barbarity, for this further act of severity to my countrymen.

Three months had passed away since our unfortunate visit to this place, when we had the additional misfortune to hear, what perhaps would have given me pleasure in any other situation, that hostilities had actually commenced between the two countries England and Spain, and that a declaration of war was daily expected.

I now began to contemplate some scheme of making our escape; and I suggested to my dear wife the expediency of raising money some how or other, to enable us to do so: but she advised me to be still, and put my trust in the providence of God; for at present we were placed in a peaceful and healthy obscurity by the kind interposition of that providence. "And perhaps," added she, "the least stir might throw us back amidst those horrible woods, or into that prison from which you have been so mercifully delivered." — I readily yielded to this pious, and therefore wise counsel; and having nothing better to do, we continued to

amuse ourselves in accompanying the fisherman, and in assisting him to mend his nets.

On the morning of Wednesday, the 21st of November, the weather being now settled and fine, my dearest Eliza and myself arose early and went down with the fisherman to the beach. Before we had reached it, he pointed out some ships in the offing, not, however, making any remark as to what they might be; but went into the boat with his son, and took out his nets. My wife and myself sat down the while upon a large stone, regarding the ships with wishful eyes, yet scarcely daring to hope they were come for our deliverance. As the breeze freshened, the ships approached the opposite coast, the smaller vessels standing in ahead of the others; and, O! how it cheered my heart to recognise the Porghee, at that very moment among the foremost.

The Spanish fort soon began to fire. The smaller vessels came over near to the side where we were, when some of them anchored close to the edge of the reef, hoisting at the same time a chequered flag at the fore. The large ships kept on the other side, and soon closed one after another with Hierro Castle. The firing was awful. Our affrighted friend the fisherman, quickly returned to the beach, asking me what all that could mean. Then calling aloud on *San Gieronimo* for succour and protection, he entreated us to leave the beach, and come up to his house as a place of greater safety. But my eyes were rivetted on the scene of action; my heart beat high in witnessing the noble efforts of my countrymen. And while the

fisherman invoked *his saint*, my Eliza called upon *Him*, who has said "*Vengeance is mine*," to punish the oppressors. We kept our position, looking steadily at the awful combat, till the firing ceased; and the instant the smoke cleared away, we discerned the English colours flying on the walls of the Spanish castle. On seeing this, my Eliza and myself both raised our hands to Heaven, in token of the feeling that actuated us, but we spoke not a word. The firing was now heard by us in the direction of the town, where some of the ships were evidently engaged with the other forts. The firing continued nearly all day, during which, notwithstanding the success our eyes had witnessed, we were agitated to a degree not to be described — we trembled for the safety of our friend Drake, but our whole soul was moved for the result of the daring enterprise.

In the evening, Padre Guircino came to the fisherman's hut, and told us the place was taken by the English; — O, what blessed news for us! — and he begged of me to go with him immediately to his monastery; and Lady Seaward to go to the Convent of St. Anna, where the Lady Abbess impatiently awaited her arrival, as they expected nothing less than a general pillage and misusage. Almost without power of utterance — though our eyes and our hands clasped in each other told our happy feelings — we accompanied him, and disposed ourselves according to his request: for we owed our lives to him, and to the charitable woman who now desired the protection of my wife's presence.

In the evening the Castle of Gloria opened its

gates to the *British flag*, and the redoubtable *Don Francisco Martinez de Retez surrendered himself and Porto Bello to the gallant Vernon!* but there was neither pillage nor misusage.

On the morning of the 22d I had the heartfelt delight of seeing, from the windows of the monastery, the English colours flying on Gloria Castle and at Fort Jeronimo, and six fine two-decked men of war, besides smaller vessels, all bearing the British flag, riding proudly in the harbour. Is not our country's glory every man's glory? How my heart swelled with honest pride, when I beheld this glorious sight!

Towards the afternoon I wrote a note to the Admiral, stating my case and situation to him as concisely as possible. To which I received an immediate answer, requesting my presence at the Government-house as soon as convenient. I only stopped to send a few lines to my dear wife, and then waited on the Admiral, dressed in my old tattered uniform, dirty and blood-stained; accompanied only by the officer who brought me the welcome reply. Captain Knight was there before me. He also had been ill: we were shocked when we looked upon each other. The Admiral came in at the moment of our meeting, and Commodore Brown was with him, who had seen me at Jamaica. Without preamble, the brave Vernon expressed his indignation at the treatment we had received; then instantly summoned the Spanish Governor to attend. This Hidalgo shortly after entered a prisoner of war, into the very room where we had last seen him so haughty and vindictive, attended

by some of the very men who were now with him sharers in his captivity.

A sort of ring was now formed, with the Spanish Governor in the centre, his interpreter standing by his side. — "I have no quarrel with Don Francisco Martinez de Retez," said I, "on my own account; but I have, and ever shall have, a quarrel with him on account of the King, my master; whom he most grossly insulted, by disrespectful words, in the presence of Captain Knight and myself; and for the resenting of which, we have endured, as it was our duty so to do, the severest treatment at his hands." — "What did he say?" exclaimed the Admiral. "He first insulted Sir Edward Seaward, by the most insolent and contemptuous behaviour," replied Captain Knight; "and when I remonstrated, telling him, that he should recollect that Sir Edward Seaward was equal in rank to himself, holding honourable commissions under the King of England, he replied — "I do not consider the King of England himself equal in rank to me; for he is little better than a Dutchman." Old Vernon, on hearing this, instantly turned round upon his Excellency Don Francisco Martinez de Retez, with a voice of thunder — "You d—d poltroon! with all your long yarn of hard names, what shall I call you? Down on your marrow-bones, you scoundrel, and beg pardon of these gentlemen, and of the King our master, or I'll kick you from Hell to Hackney! Tell him that," said he to the interpreter. The interpreter was dumb-founded: however, the looks and menaces of the Admiral left little to be interpreted. After

some pause and explanation, this mighty Don asked pardon of Captain Knight and myself, but he would do no more. This would not satisfy the Admiral, who insisted on his eating the words he had spoken disrespectfully of his Majesty; at the same time taking a guinea from his pocket, he threw it on the floor, saying — "There is the King's picture! down on your knees, you blackguard, and ask forgiveness;" laying hold of the Spaniard by the neck as he spoke, and bending him to the ground. The astounded Governor took up the guinea from the floor; then putting it down again, said, in a muffled voice — "*Yo he ofendido.*" This was considered as sufficient; and the question, so far, set at rest. I now demanded my sword, which was valuable to me, not only on account of its gold hilt, but because it had been touched by the hand of her Majesty, the late Queen, who had curiously admired its workmanship. I immediately received an assurance that it should be returned; and it was, together with the side arms of Captain Knight.

On quitting the Government-house with my fellow sufferer, we met Drake, crossing the Prado, who had been making enquiry for us every where. On seeing me, he stood still; but as we approached near to him, he burst into tears. "Cheer up, my good fellow," cried Knight; "all's well! you see we are alive and kicking." Drake threw himself on my neck, saying — "I hope all is well! Is Lady Seaward well?" — "All is well, my dear Drake," I replied: "you shall soon see her." We now bent our steps to the Convent of Santa Anna. On our

way, among other questions, Captain Knight asked Drake if he knew any thing of Rentone; for he was not here among the prisoners from The Marten. My friend told him he had picked him up at sea, and that he was now here in the fleet. On our arrival at the convent, we were met in the vestibule by my happy wife, and the Lady Abbess. She brought us some sweetmeats, and cool drink made of red sorrel; by which, and this blessed meeting of long separated friends, we were much refreshed both in body and mind.

I took this opportunity of walking apart with Drake. He told me, that after he had picked up The Marten's boat with Mr. Rentone, he made an unsuccessful attempt to assist us. But on seeing the destruction of The Marten, he made the best of his way to Jamaica, with the account of what had happened. "Yet," he added, "up to this hour, I do not know how or why it did happen! — however, I reported the business, as much as I knew and could conjecture of it, to the Commodore and Governor of Jamaica; and asked permission to be permitted to embark all the force of Seaward Islands in the vessels that belonged to the place, and make an attack on Porto Bello, to attempt your rescue. But I was told," continued he, "that the scheme was a mad one; and I received something like an assurance that there should be no occasion for it. I then received orders to visit Seaward Islands, but to return to Jamaica; which I did before the end of September. On my arrival there, I learnt that orders of reprisal had been issued against Spain; and I became desirous, of

course, to get out to sea, for a chance of making prizes; but the Commodore would not allow me to stir. I confess I was much chagrined at this usage, while all the other vessels were sent out in every direction; nor could I surmise what was the cause of it. But on the 23d of October, Admiral Vernon made his appearance at Port Royal; and I was then informed why I had been detained. It was to accompany the Admiral's squadron to Porto Bello, to assist, by my local knowledge, in the meditated enterprise. This information," exclaimed my gallant friend, "was more acceptable to me than a thousand galleons; and I now rejoice, my dear Sir Edward, in seeing the noble prize before me — You and She, whom we all devotedly love."

"We must leave this hateful place, my dear friend," said I, "as soon as possible. Have you any money on board?"—"I have;" he replied, "and the money and clothes belonging to you and Lady Seaward, which were embarked when you came here." I then desired him to send us some clothes, and a bag of dollars; and told him I would write to the Admiral, to give us permission to depart, without loss of time. Drake now left us: and as the ships were in too great confusion, in consequence of the late action with the forts, to receive us, I was glad still to leave my dear wife with the Lady Abbess; and I took my friend Knight with me to the monastery of the Franciscans, where he, as well as myself, was well received by Padre Guircino and his associates.

In the afternoon some clothes arrived for myself and Lady Seaward, and a bag of 1000

dollars. I shared my clothes with Captain Knight; and, after much entreaty, prevailed on him to accept 100 dollars, to meet his present emergencies. But he would only take this small sum as a loan, although I had wished him to accept 500 as a present, — in consideration of his having suffered the loss of all his things, his ship, and his health also, on my account: but he objected, saying, — "it was only in the way of his duty; and as he had more than six months' pay now due to him, he should have money enough by and by. But if I chose to lend him the 100 dollars, he would thank me." He therefore had them on his own terms.

We now treated ourselves to a shave and a good wash, and put on some clean linen, and a suit each of handsome clothes. The good Friars sent into the town, at my request, and procured us some excellent Spanish shoes, and a couple of *sombreros*, or cocked hats, in their fashion. In the evening we went to the convent, taking with us two lay brothers of the Franciscans, one of whom carried my dear wife's small trunk, and the other a bag containing 500 dollars. We were met, as before, in the vestibule, and there complimented by the Lady Abbess on our good looks and elegant apparel. The trunk was sent into the convent; and, after the lay brothers had retired, I whispered my dear Eliza — "Here are 500 dollars, which place at the pleasure of that good lady: but tell her we wish the lay brother, and the negro woman at the deserted monastery, to have 50 each: and we desire that the fisherman and his wife may have

100 each. The other 200 are at the disposal of the Lady Abbess, to relieve the distressed." — "I will give them to her now," returned my dear wife. She then addressed the good lady in French, handing her the bag, which was graciously received, with many commendations for our generosity, and a promise of faithfully applying it. Our hostess gave us chocolate; and as we sat taking it, and conversing, I often saw the nuns peeping at us through the gratings, with an ardent curiosity.

On the following morning I sent for the doctor to the monastery, and presented him with 100 dollars, in the presence of Padre Guircino. The worthy *medico* had never seen so large a fee before; therefore his grateful acknowledgments were proportioned. The good Father present, also added his best thanks for my noble conduct towards him, and to all my late benefactors. "But how can I return your kindnesses?" I said. "I am the servant of God," he replied; "you owe me nothing." This was true religion, worthy of imitation by many who despise all that are not so happy as to enjoy the light of our reformed church.

A little before noon, Captain Knight and myself made a short visit to the convent; from whence we went down into the town, to pay our respects to the Admiral. At first he did not know us; and, on recognising us, he affected not to do so. "Who the devil have we got here?" said he, turning to Captain Knight: "you are a Spanish hidalgo, I suppose!" Poor Knight looked embarrassed, and bowed; then pointing to me, said—"Sir Edward Seaward has kindly given me a suit of his clothes."

The old gentleman laughed heartily; immediately afterwards saying, "Sir Edward, I beg your pardon: it was your long-toed shoes, and *three-cornered scrapers* that puzzled me." In turn, I made my respects, but in a different way; and concluded by requesting him to allow the Porghee to return with Lady Seaward and myself, to our place of residence as soon as possible, my wife's health being in a precarious state. He instantly complied with my wish; and seemed pleased to take the opportunity of speaking with warm approbation of Lieutenant Drake's conduct, in buoying the entrance to the harbour under a heavy fire from the fort; regretting that, as so few Spanish vessels of war had been found here, there was no promotion for him, although he well deserved it. After this discourse, it was arranged that I might sail to-morrow; and I then took leave of the brave old Admiral, wishing him success in further humbling the haughty spirit of Spain.

In an hour after I had left him, Drake received his orders; and in the evening he came up to the monastery to tell me so. Captain Knight and myself carried the welcome intelligence to my dear wife; and I had then the pleasure to see our kind friends, the fisherman and his wife, in the vestibule, receiving the two hundred dollars from her own hand.

Early in the morning of the 26th, I took leave of the worthy Padre Guircino, and with some difficulty persuaded him to accept a small offering to distribute among the poor lay brothers of his order. Then calling for Lady Seaward, whom I found in

waiting for me at the convent door, we bade an affectionate adieu to the benevolent Abbess, and hastened on board our dear little vessel. The sails were already loose, and the anchor a-trip, and in an instant we were under weigh, standing out to sea with a fine breeze. I could not but remark the great number of men on board; on which Drake told me that his complement had been increased to thirty men, and I might observe that he had mounted two of our wall-pieces on his quarter.

As the high land above Point Porto Bello receded from our view, we descried a ship on our weather bow, steering in. Drake asked me if I thought he should take a look at her, or keep on our course. I answered, — "Certainly, take a look at her; she may prove a prize to you: but take care you are not brought to action by a superior force: recollect who we have with us." — "I will take care of that," he replied. Then taking me at my word, he wore, and stood athwart her, having previously hoisted Spanish colours. In less than an hour he came within hail of her: she was a Spanish merchant ship, but mounted eight or ten guns. I confess I did not much like the appearance of this business; but as we stood across him, Drake ordered our proper ensign to be hoisted; then wearing short round, boarded him on the quarter in a moment, and carried him in five minutes, without firing a shot. He was from La Guira, with indigo, cocoa, Peruvian bark, and other merchandise, bound to Porto Bello, having a complement of twenty-four men. The prisoners were soon secured; a prize-master, with a sufficient number of hands, being then put

on board, the two vessels stood on quietly to the northward. We rejoiced greatly at the success of our friend Drake, and in the gallant manner the capture had been accomplished.

On the evening of the 29th, the promontory of St. George's Island was discovered by the man at the mast head. We ran in towards it, until the sun had set; when Drake thought it advisable, having the prize to take care of, besides his own vessel, to stand off until the morning. At the distance we were from the land, the sea breeze blew all night; and in the morning it carried us through the channel, to within a league of the headlands before it died away. About eight o'clock it reached us again, and we again made sail; the Porghee having hoisted my flag the St. George's jack, at the fore, but showing a blue ensign, in honour of the gallant Vice-Admiral we had lately quitted. The prize hung out her own colours, with a union jack over them, which now streamed gaily forth from the mizen peak. The colours were up on the promontory — and our hearts were up also.

Before the vessels came within a mile of the harbour's mouth, we saw boats and canoes, large and small, between the headlands, sailing and rowing, and paddling out towards us. The breeze being fresh, the vessels shortened sail, for fear of running them down. In a very short time we passed through amongst them, while they lay by, gazing and cheering, as I waved my hat, and my dear wife her white handkerchief, from the quarter deck on which we stood.

The Porghee had scarcely anchored, when the

deck was crowded by those we loved, and by those who loved us unfeignedly. They who could not embrace us, embraced one another, and wept, or looked silently on us, endeavouring to conceal their tears. We were much altered. The sickness and sorrow I had endured at Porto Bello, had made a deep impression on my frame and features, and the people saw it. My dear Eliza, too, worn almost to a shadow, looking not like a thing of earth, but in semblance of a disembodied spirit, stood by my side. Her eyes sympathised with the people; and I, too, was unmanned by the scene. I am not ashamed to confess it.

CHAP. VI.

ONCE more restored to our happy home, with feelings that might be envied by the monarch of a throne, we disembarked; landing hand in hand, amidst the caresses and greetings of our dear relations and not less dear friends and dependants. On reaching the mansion, kind Mr. Rowley, and the doctor, pressed us to retire to rest, for a while, that we might be relieved from the further excitement of seeing any one, until we had recovered from our evident exhaustion. I felt the force of their advice, and immediately complied.

By dinner time we were sufficiently refreshed to meet our friends, and converse with them on the subject of our late sufferings, and our glorious deliverance. Drake, meanwhile, had merely given them a brief outline of what had happened to us. He had very little time to spare for talk, having to moor his prize, and unbend her sails; so that she might neither be driven from her anchors by the wind, nor be carried away by the Spanish crew in the Porghee's absence, if they dared to rise on the prize-master. I was, therefore, under the necessity of going somewhat into detail; but my dear Eliza took up the theme, and then every one present was moved even to tears.

After we had brought the subject to a close, I could not suppress my anxiety to know the posture of our affairs at home. But Dr. Gordon

thought, for the present I ought to be satisfied with knowing that all things had gone on tolerably well; that there was not any thing of so much importance to need attention, as the re-establishment of my own health: and he was of opinion I should not engage in any business matters whatever, for some days at least. "I look worse than I am, Doctor," said I; "we shall see what to-morrow may say." — "Then Sir Edward," whispered Van Kempen, who had stood silently by my chair for an hour, "I shall be right glad to say a word to you to-morrow." — "Say it now, my good friend," I replied, "if it be a matter of any moment to you." — "It is of immediate moment," he replied, "to us all. We must not lose this chance, sir; and if we would not lose the chance, we must not lose the time." — "What is it, Van Kempen?" — "The Porto Bello market, sir. I saw the thing the instant Captain Drake told us the English had taken the place, and I directly spoke to your brother about it; but he left it to me to break the matter to you. I hope, therefore, you will consent to our loading his vessel and mine with all the merchandise in our stores, and proceed forthwith; for all the world will be there in a few weeks." I consented to this proposal, without hesitation, complimenting Van Kempen on his commercial acuteness. Then, after some further conversation with him and my brother on the subject, I allowed them to depart, sending a message to Drake to visit me early in the morning.

Soon after they were gone, Dr. Gordon said, "It was an incumbent duty on him to take care of

Lady Seaward and myself: that rest of mind and of body were essential to the re-establishment of our health: that for the present he would not decide on the medical treatment to be pursued; but he was inclined to think we had taken too much jesuit's bark, or it had been given injudiciously; by which error the hepatic functions, as he expressed it, had been partially suspended; and he feared that, in consequence, the spleen had begun to enlarge, if he might judge by the peculiar aspect of countenance which that disease uniformly produced." Poor Diego (who, with Rota, had remained as near to us as possible, ever since our arrival,) now ventured to say, "Master Diego hopes Master Doctor will allow him to take Governor, Sir Edward, and his lady, every morning for ride on mules, or for row them about in barge, before breakfast." On this dear old Rota, stepping forward, put in her word, saying, "And I will have nice chicken, boiled in milk, with little mace, for my lady, and good master, Sir Edward, when they come back: and that better than doctor physic for them." — "We will discuss your proposals by and by, dame," replied Dr. Gordon; "for the present they must be kept very quiet; and, if you please, Mr. Diego and Mistress Rota, I am the responsible person."

A hostile feeling was getting up between the parties, when dear Mr. Rowley interposed; and after having said what was necessary for peace, our conscientious doctor took leave of us for the evening; on which, both my dear wife and myself thanked our kind and early negro friends for their

solicitude; assuring them that, as soon as it appeared advisable, we would profit by their attentions. But Mistress Rota was not to be put off so. She had provided a warm bath for her lady, at her own house; of which she and Rosalie soon apprised my dear wife, who communicated the matter to me: and as I could see no objection to its use, but rather the contrary, she accordingly went; returning, in less than an hour, much refreshed and invigorated by its application.

On the morrow, Dr. Gordon paid us an early visit. He was immediately informed of what had been done; on which, he said, — as it had been done, he would refrain from any observations, further than, "it was unadvised: it might have been positively wrong, although it happened not to be so. He, after due consideration, would have recommended it; but as a few degrees of temperature made all the difference between its being wrong or right, even after the thing itself was determined on as appropriate to the case, the temperature and other points connected with its administration required some deliberation." The doctor now proceeded, *secundum artem*, first with me, and then with Lady Seaward. The pulse was counted, the tongue examined, the liver and spleen pressed upon by his hand: sometimes we were desired to make a deep inspiration, sometimes to sneeze. This being done, he sat down for half an hour without speaking a word. As he looked more grave than usual, my dear wife at last addressed him, — "Dr. Gordon, if you think Sir Edward's case serious, I insist on your telling me

so, unequivocally, that he may immediately return to England." — "Indeed no, madam," he replied, "I think, by small doses of sweet mercury and Turkey rhubarb, and the warm salt water bath, at a temperature of ninety-six degrees, with gentle exercise on the beasts you have here, taking a sail or a row now and then upon the water, observing a milk diet chiefly, and relaxation of mind — on the part of Sir Edward — you both may very soon be pretty well again. But I cannot say," continued he, after pausing a minute, "that either the one or the other of you will be just so well as before you had the fever at Porto Bello."

When the doctor left us, Master Diego and our kind Rota were overjoyed to find how much there was for them to do. The old lady prepared a bath for me, without loss of time, which appeared the shorter, as Drake was with me during the interval. The business of our interview, related to the going of our merchant vessels to Porto Bello. It was determined that Drake should accompany them in the Porghee, and take with him fifteen of his prisoners. This measure was called for, to afford our traders some protection, and also to give Drake an opportunity of making known his good fortune to the admiral, whose share of it was not inconsiderable; and to learn his pleasure as to what port or place he would desire the prize to be sent, which had been ascertained to be of considerable value, not less than eighty thousand dollars. Drake now went on his business, and I repaired to the bath.

On my return I was met by my dear sister, with her baby. The sight of the little innocent, cooing and

springing in its mother's arms, gave me inexpressible pleasure. I thought its eyes so like those of my Eliza, that I felt as if I could gaze on them for ever. "You will call it Eliza, my dear sister," said I, as I looked wistfully upon the sweet angel. — "Yes, brother," she replied, "most willingly; it was Drake's wish that I should do so, and I am now doubly happy in knowing that it is yours also. Besides, it is the wish of my own heart," continued she, going over to my dear wife, and kissing her as she spoke: "it will make me happy to call my child Eliza, for you know how much I love you: and I will teach the babe to be sensible of your great kindnesses, both to me and to her father."

My brother and Van Kempen were so busy in loading their vessels, that I did not see them till the evening; so I suppose they either dined with Van Kempen's vrow, or took a pork sausage with Gortz, hot from the coals. Mrs. Seaward, however, was with us; and we were happy in being able to sit down with her, and my sister, and Drake, and our other kind and worthy guests, to dinner. The warm bath had been of essential service to both of us, so that we were able to eat comfortably.

Doctor Gordon came in, accompanied by my brother and Van Kempen, in the evening, bringing with him a *bolus* for each of us, which we were to take at night. After handing these bullets to me, he said, "I should not break in upon my own rules; but I cannot help submitting to you, Sir Edward, a question that stands between these gentlemen here and myself, as fiscal for the colony. They are shipping goods that never paid the *ad valorem* duty,

having been in store before the impost. But I say it was an oversight, that they were not rated: and now they are going to market, it is but fair those goods should pay as well as the others. They object to this."—"Why do you object to it, Mr. Van Kempen?" said I. "Because," he replied, "such a measure would be unlawful. We have no duty on exports, and the goods in question were landed before the regulation was made; and to make those goods pay, would be making laws retrospective, which would be admitting a principle destructive of all commercial confidence. Yet I do not deny," continued he, "that it was an oversight not to include the goods in store; but such oversights are common, both in England and Holland, and there is no remedy in strict justice. The government may profit by the mistake, in making its future enactments; and that may be some compensation — I know no other. But, Sir Edward," added he, after a moment's pause, "I am not personally interested. The point in question is entirely with Mr. Seaward; all my goods have paid the impost."—"Well," exclaimed my brother, "Doctor Gordon has said more about it than the thing is worth. The whole value of the goods in question does not amount to above one hundred dollars: and I would rather pay the fiscal the one dollar demanded, than hear any more about it."—"Your pardon, I hope, Mr. Seaward," replied the honest fiscal, "all I said was in the line of my duty. If Sir Edward Seaward thinks Mr. Van Kempen's view of the case right, it would not be honest to take your money, sir: I am but the fiscal." A

smile rose on my lip, at the earnestness of these three men upon a point that never could occur again; which consideration, together with the smallness of the sum in question, rendered it a matter of no moment; but the subject had been brought before me as important. I therefore gravely gave my decision, "That there could be no impost levied on goods imported prior to the laying on of the duty, but that the fiscal was right to look sharp after the revenue of the colony, even to a fraction."

This subject being set at rest, I told our merchants that Captain Drake would convoy their vessels to Porto Bello, as soon as they could be got ready. Then, pleading indisposition, I left them, and joined my Eliza in her own room, to which she had already retired. There I found her with Rosalie, and our dear little dog, playing on a fine large palm-leafed mat, that had been made for us by Ximenes in our absence. I was not ashamed to join the innocent party, but sat down among them, till Fidele by his kisses and caresses drove me from my position, to the great amusement of Rosalie, and delight of my Eliza. But we had now to take Doctor Gordon's *boluses*. They were little less than a musket ball: it was impossible to swallow them. After some deliberation, we proposed to chew them, as they were principally rhubarb, and wash them down with a cup of coffee, which we both effected tolerably well; and in this way we contrived to take the medicine, as long as the Doctor thought necessary to prescribe it, which might be about three weeks. I often spoke to him,

to put it in some other form; but he uniformly objected, saying, "It is the *deobstruent bolus*, and therefore cannot be other than a bolus." To this pharmaceutical dogma we were obliged to submit, although the folly of it was evident; for, had we not fallen on the expedient of the coffee, by which it was no longer *a bolus*, we either must have been choked by the remedy, or deprived altogether of its benefit.

In a few days the vessels sailed for Porto Bello. It was on the 4th of December. I seized on the opportunity to send half a dozen of my best sheep to the Admiral, with a handsome private letter, in addition to the public one on the subject of our two vessels going to his port. Van Kempen accompanied the expedition in his galliot, as supercargo both of his own and my brother's merchandise, with full power to sell and buy as he might think proper. I was glad to see in this that James had got over those narrow views of trade which fasten naturally on the minds, not only of individuals, but of nations. It is the selfish principle which never fails ultimately to miss its object, as well in commerce as in every other branch of human intercourse.

After the departure of the vessels, I was glad to find myself able to attend at intervals to the details of what had happened, and to what had been doing during my long absence from the settlement; but my recovery to any thing like active health, was slow; and my dear Eliza continued not only weak, but still experienced some ague fits, generally every fourth day. Doctor Gordon now thought it expedient in her case to resume the exhibition of the

Jesuit's bark. However, our recovery, though tardy, was progressive; so that in less than a month we were able to attend divine service under the hallowed canopy of the great tree; and we soon not only enjoyed the morning row upon the lake, in Diego's barge, and the afternoon sail in the Avon, beyond the headlands out to sea, but we again took a morning bath of refreshing sea water, and immediately after a bowl of new milk from the goats, followed by a ride. And thus we gradually acquired something of our former elasticity of mind and body.

As my strength increased, my spirits improved; and the former deep interest I had taken in every body, and every thing, at this place returned unimpaired. I again felt my heart warm in the business; so that every detail, even respecting an ass's foal, was listened to by me with pleasure. But it necessarily fell out that there were things unpleasant, as well as things pleasant, to hear. It were, however, ungrateful to Providence not to acknowledge that the evils were few, considering the many to which man is exposed, as well in his collective as in his individual station of life.

Sickness had certainly been more prevalent during my absence than usual; in consequence of which, one of the women from Carolina had died, and two of the German children. But Diego had a serious visitation to impart to me, worse than the plague of the small-pox. The place was overrun with *rats*; and he could not imagine whence they came. They destroyed the corn, and had completely ruined the little patches of sugar-cane below the cotton tree; but, happily, they had not appeared

either on Edward's Island, or at Peccary Field. Unfortunately there were not any cats in the settlement. Hitherto I had not allowed any to be brought to it, as there was no natural prey for them, neither rats nor mice; and I did not desire to see the native doves and nightingales driven by grimalkin from our doors. But I now wished that some adventurous *Whittington* might come to the port with a cargo of *tabbies;* and in the humour I was in when Diego imparted the information to me, I think I should have given him his own price for the investment, although I might know my conscientious fiscal would not remit one fraction on the *ad valorem* duty, if it were to save his own nose from being gnawed off by the vermin.

There were, however, some small dogs at German Town, and Allwood's Bay; and as Fidele had already killed a few of the intruders, we might expect a similar service from his humbler fellows. "When we get in crop, sir," said Diego, "you give me dogs; and Jemmy Purdy, he famous rat-catcher, sir; we then dig all them out, and kill every one. *Donna Rata* always live under cane roots, sir, and about in holes." When the time for taking up the crops came, which soon arrived, Diego marshalled his forces; but the matter was of too much importance to be left to Purdy and the dogs. A levy *en masse* was required, by which we formed a *cordon* round our little plantation. As the rats were dug out, or started, the dogs generally caught hold of them, but the creatures were very large and powerful, and bit sharply, so that sometimes the dogs let them go. Purdy, however,

always killed his rat: he caught it adroitly, and grasped it fearlessly, throwing it with great force into the air, never failing to strike it as it came down, with a short stick he held in his left hand, which he suddenly shifted over to the right. "Hit him at once, with your stick, while he is on the ground, Purdy," said I, instead of killing him as you do."—"Can't, sir," he replied; "he stop for me to put hand on him; won't stop to hit him with stick: and if I hit him with stick when I catch him, if I don't kill him dead he will bite me to the bone." And this was true enough; for although the people were armed with sticks, and the rats passed closely among them, not above two were struck and killed; and one negro was bit severely, who had caught a rat with the hand, and then struck it with his stick while he had hold of it. When the enterprise finished, although the dogs and Purdy had killed nearly thirty, I was convinced as many more had escaped: a formidable horde of barbarians, sufficient to procreate a host equal to the destruction of every thing belonging to us, if not ourselves also.

This great evil still hung over the colony. The sickness had passed away, and the deaths in consequence of the sickness had been few, and of importance only to their immediate connections; but I was thankful that it ended here, for our good and useful pastor had been spared, who with his whole family had been in great danger, not long after our departure for Porto Bello.

An accession of five families from Kingston, Jamaica, had been made in my absence. They were

all people of colour, that is, Mulattoes, and had been induced to come, through the representations of the elder Allwood; who had made a trip in my brother's schooner. Being all poor, and only two of the men having trades, they were at present subsisted, as all the others formerly had been, by the produce of the silk cotton-tree plantation, and from the stores at my expense. But I was glad, nevertheless, to hear of this accession to our numbers; which in my mind was always important to the ultimate well-being, and security of the settlement. Allwood had taken one of the families to live with him; my brother had located another, on his own lands near to the German Town Pass. Two families were lodged in the village, in separate houses, there being now eighteen houses completed. One of the men was a tailor; the other I do not know what to call him; he said he was a millwright, but he was also a tolerable good smith; and there was reason to suspect he had been a slave on some plantation in Jamaica, brought up to the anvil, under his master's white workmen. In consequence, I instituted an enquiry, but as I never could get at the truth of the matter, I chose rather to run the risk of letting him remain quietly where he was, than send him back to Kingston. Still I felt, that although I did not encourage slavery, nor allow it at Seaward Islands, yet it was not for me to permit Mr. Allwood, nor any one else among us, to believe that I would connive at the desertion of slaves from their masters in Jamaica; whose legal property I was bound to consider them, how repugnant soever it might be to my feelings as a man and a Christian,

to do so. The fifth family had gone to German Town. Matthew Hinkleman, the husband of the Flemish woman, having wished to reside in the village, and to keep shop under the auspices of Van Kempen, he therefore let his house and lot at German Town, to this man, for a consideration, and engaged to pay rent for the house he had taken in the village. This is the outline respecting these five families, which altogether amount to twenty-one persons. No time had been lost in sending their children to the school-house, where they were now, in common with others, learning to read, to sew, and to make plait for hats. Mr. Rowley had baptized them all, and married the heads of the families, who, hitherto, had lived together merely by consent, as is the custom with all negroes and people of colour in Jamaica.

About a month previous to my return, a discovery of some consequence had been made at German Town, by Adrian Wor and William Schwartz. In process of time, the few pipes brought by the Germans, had become quite useless, being either worn out, or broke entirely. And this, to them was a great privation, as they found but puny comfort in a cigar. Adrian Wor, by accident, found some good clay below the rocky face of the hill east of the town, with which he contrived to make a few short shapeless pipes. These, with the assistance of Schwartz, he managed to burn tolerably well, and gave them, as he made them, to his friends and countrymen. The two men having accomplished this great matter, tried their hand at fabricating some brown dishes, which, after a few

failures and further perseverance, and a lesson from Hart the bricklayer, as to the necessity of mixing sand with the clay, they succeeded so well, that when the business was mentioned to me by Doctor Gordon, I desired that Hart should go over to German Town, with a load of bricks in the Avon, and erect a spacious kiln for these men, which he did, and finished it before the end of the month. After the kiln was completed, they contrived to burn a considerable quantity of coarse ware; not very well shaped, I must confess, but the specimens I received gave me so much satisfaction, that for their encouragement, I made them a present of the kiln, and two tons of coals, part of our stock imported for burning lime.

On Saturday the 22d of December, there was a grand field-day. We mustered seventy-two rank and file, including Sergeant Craig, the two corporals, the drillman, and drummers; besides three artillery men, who attended muster with one of the field-pieces. The new comers were well dressed and equipped, and having belonged to the militia at Jamaica, did not disgrace the squad. My brother acquitted himself well, as Captain of the band. Both great guns, and small arms, were exercised; the business finishing with firing ball at a target.

On the following day, which was the Sabbath, I had the pleasure to see a full attendance at divine worship. The people were all remarkably clean and neatly dressed, every one wearing straw hats, the manufacture of the island. Many persons, black as well as white, joined in the hymns; and a

joyous feeling seemed to be imparted to the whole congregration, by the discourse of our excellent pastor, who took his text from the second chapter of St. Matthew:—"*Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the East, and are come to worship him.*" He represented the Saviour's coming, as the morning star, ushering in the light of day, before which the long night of darkness was dispelled, that for so many ages had hung upon the nations. The blessed Gospel, he said, was as *the sea breeze*, with healing on its wings, that comes in from the portals of the East, breathing life and comfort to all who feel its influence. He then dwelt on the holy precepts of our blessed Redeemer, and on the righteous example he had set before us; and desired us, if we would call him *Lord*, to adorn his Gospel by the sanctity of our lives. In concluding his most excellent discourse, he said,—"In a few days we shall have the happiness to commemorate the anniversary of the *Messiah*'s coming, as foretold by the wise men, who saw *his star in the East;* a day of rejoicing to all men; for in the end his Gospel shall cover the earth as the waters cover the sea."

The Tuesday following, was Christmas day. The dawn was awakened by the drum and fife playing "*The Reveillez.*" Every thing had been provided for the *Isthmean games*, and a festival enjoyment prepared for the people, and ourselves, as on the preceding year. It was delightful to me —to my dear Eliza it was the same—to be present at their sports; and to witness both men, women, and children, enjoying themselves with the various re-

freshments, and pastimes, that had been provided for their recreation and amusement. The St. George's flag, which has a white field with a red cross, was hoisted at sunrise, on a flag-staff lately erected at the fort; but as I now thought it necessary to husband our gunpowder, no salute was fired, as on the former anniversary of this blessed day.

All our friends banquetted with us at the mansion: we assembled in our best attire, and my dear wife wore the diamond cross which our much-lamented Queen had placed upon her breast. All our plate and best dinner equipage were displayed. Mistress Rota covered the table sumptuously with three courses in succession, followed by a dessert of delicious fruits, all the product of this late desolate island. Master Diego stood behind my chair, in state, dressed in his blue and gold, being more superbly attired, but equal in self-importance to *King Cudjoe* of the *Maroons*. His six bargemen, in white jackets and petticoat trowsers, with a new Bandana handkerchief tied loosely in a bowling knot round the shirt collar, were also in attendance; besides my two habitual men-servants, Rowland Dick and Raymond Price (the mulatto drummers sent to me by Governor Trelawney), now dressed in the King's livery. Mistress Rota took post in the second hall, where she received the maid-servants in a train with the supplies from the kitchen, whence they were forwarded to the dinner-table in due order, without bustle or confusion.

I confess I felt proud, as I sat opposite to my beloved wife, in gazing on her, and on the cross

she wore; and in the recollection of the love and friendship the royal bestower of it, had on all occasions manifested for her who wore it. I felt proud, also, in seeing myself surrounded by affectionate relations and kind friends; and in being so sumptuously served by the produce of our own settlement. In this latter consideration, my satisfaction was complete: it could not be increased, even by the wines of the finest quality, from Madeira, the Rhine, and the Garonne, that now associated themselves with our native dessert, nor by the brave appearance of my men in waiting.

After dinner, Rosalie came in with Mr. Rowley's children. She, as well as they, was desired to take a seat at the table. This matter had been talked over by my dear wife, not only with me, but with Mr. and Mrs. Rowley; and it had been determined that, considering her uniform good conduct, her excellent education, and respectable descent, she might be admitted to the rank of companion to Lady Seaward, with strict propriety, and treated as one of the family. Rosalie was modest, though a Frenchwoman; she hesitated to take the chair offered to her. — "Mademoiselle Filebert," said my dear Eliza, "I seize on the opportunity this day affords me, of seating you among my friends, and by the side of those dear children whom we love. Their father, and your father, and my father — ministers of the same Lord, whose day we now celebrate, — presents a bond of union, I am not disposed to reject. I therefore desire you to be seated among us; and because I esteem you for your own sake, I wish henceforth to rank you

among my friends, and to treat you as my companion, and as one of the family."— Rosalie expressed her thanks, with much good feeling and courtesy, as she sat down; on which I drank her health, all our friends following my example. Then she sung, and played to us on her guitar; and the day was made to resound with decent joy, throughout the settlement.

On the 27th, we had the pleasure to receive intelligence from the *look-out* on the promontory, that the Porghee was in sight, but alone; and in the afternoon she made her way into the harbour, with baffling winds and squally weather, coming to an anchor on the starboard bow of the Spanish prize. I was rejoiced to see Drake again, for I had not been without some uneasiness for his timely return; knowing too well how to appreciate the dangerous tempests which visit these seas soon after the winter solstice, not to wish anxiously for his safe arrival before the weather became unsettled.

He brought me a letter from the Admiral, which was short, but quite satisfactory: — "Dear Sir, — All you wish shall be done: —thank you for the sheep. Yours, Edward Vernon."—"Laconic enough, Drake," said I, folding up the letter, after having cast my eye over its contents: "however, it says all I should desire; so I have no reason to complain. The Admiral, we know, is a man of deeds, and not of words; I therefore excuse his apparent want of courtesy." — "I assure you, Sir Edward," replied Drake, "he was not so hard off for words in speech, as on paper: he said you were 'a fine fellow, dirtily used;' and he had great

pleasure in serving you. The manner in which he behaved, showed his sincerity: he ordered every facility to be given to the vessels, to dispose of their cargoes; the greater part of which was sold before I came away, and for which hard dollars had been received by Van Kempen." Then turning to my brother, who stood by eager to hear more, — "Mr. Seaward," continued Drake, "I have a letter for you, from Mynheer Van Kempen, and a remittance on board on account of sales, up to the day of my departure, to the tune of 6000 dollars."

Drake then resumed his discourse to me. He had arrived at Porto Bello on the 8th; and he sailed thence again, in company with a squadron of men of war, on the 13th; and proceeded with the Admiral off Carthagena, where, from his local knowledge, he was employed a few days to reconnoitre the Spanish force; but finally received orders, on the 24th, to make the best of his way to Seaward Islands, and thence go on to Jamaica with the prize. "Well, Captain Drake," said I, affecting an austere tone, "and what is your intention as to the time of your sailing for Jamaica?" — "To obey the Admiral's order promptly, Sir Edward," he replied: "I will sail to-morrow, if you have no objection." — "To-morrow, Drake! — are you mad? look at the weather," was my reply. — "The weather must not prevent me, Sir Edward; it ought not. The Admiral is at sea, and I dare not skulk in harbour," answered my gallant friend. — "But you must stay for the christening," said Mr. Rowley; "we mean to christen your little

girl on Sunday." — "My public duty is my first consideration, Mr. Rowley," replied Drake; "if it did not stand in the way, nothing could be so great a happiness to me as that you propose." — "Then, Captain Drake, for the good of His Majesty's service, the Governor of Seaward Islands will prevent you," said I, "from drowning yourself and crew, because you think it your duty to obey the Admiral's orders, in the face of an approaching tempest! Although the Admiral is now at sea, before many days are over his head he will be of my mind, and wish himself, and every ship under his command, in any nook or harbour that would shelter them. Get your schooner into Peccary Creek; tow your prize in there also. Do it without loss of time; and you shall have my written order, for all I now command to be done." — "Sir, I obey," said Drake, gravely; then, taking a glass of wine, good-humouredly drank my health, and quitted the hall to put my orders into execution.

The bad weather did not come on so instantaneously as I expected, yet it continued to lower and threaten daily; being sometimes calm, sometimes blowing sharply all round the compass; which reminded my dear Eliza, and myself, of the coming of the dreadful tempest by which we were cast on these islands. The warning this season, was long and unremitted, so that we had plenty of time to secure all our boats and canoes; and to make such dispositions for the security of our buildings, and ourselves, as the experience of former years had taught us would be necessary.

On Tuesday the 1st of January, it was calm

during the greater part of the day. At sunset the clouds gathered and broke, sending forth awful shoots of forked lightning, closely followed by heavy peals of thunder, like the firing of the ships at Porto Bello on the Hierro Fort. It then blew a tremendous gale, mostly from the westward. We were up at the mansion all night. The storm continued with little interruption for three days, blowing a hurricane, and pouring down sheets of water at intervals, like the cascade of a great river.

At Allwood's Bay, they were under the lee of the hills; and I was happy in reflecting that my dear sister was well sheltered from the violence of the wind, at Spring Hill, and also that she had her husband safe at home with her. The vessels were safe in Peccary Creek; but the German settlement, and ourselves, were quite exposed; and nothing but the heavy rains could preserve Soldier's Town, from being buried by the drift sand from the isthmus. The western face of the promontory, neutralised the force of the wind at the village, which lay immediately beneath it; and with respect to the storehouses within the cavern stoccado, they were secure against the utmost efforts of the hurricane, unless a stroke of lightning should pass into the magazine, and blow the whole up together.

Early on Saturday morning our three *look-outs* were on the alert, one on the promontory, another at the flag-staff on the height above German Town, and the third on the summit of the Sugar-Loaf Hill on Edward's Island; where Drake had planted a flag-staff also, and up to which an indifferent cork-screw walk had been cut in my absence.

From this last post, a vessel was seen in distress to the north-west, evidently stranded. Although the weather continued still boisterous, and a heavy sea was rolling in upon the reefs to the westward, breaking furiously over them, Drake lost no time in manning my barge and his own boat, with some of his best men; and taking the Avon also with him, manned by the blacks, (his former crew and present townsmen,) attended by two canoes, which were paddled by Diego's men; he made the best of his way round the south headland of Edward's Island, keeping between the innermost range of breakers and the shore.

No small devastation had been committed on the island. At my own place, the plantation store-house was blown down; Sergeant Craig's house nearly unroofed. Many shingles were blown off the mansion; and the whole of the poultry house, stoccadoes and all, were carried away, and blown up against the stone kitchen, and even back to the very face of the hill, by which some of the stock was killed. Much damage also had been sustained at Germain Town; so that the exertion of all hands not gone in the boats, was immediately called for, and no delay allowed in making the necessary arrangements for repairing the various sorts of damage sustained.

A little before noon one of the boats returned to say, that the vessel was a Kingston privateer; that all the people would be saved; and that the vessel was lying on a sand bank within the reef, with her side beat in, where nothing but a most tremendous heave of the sea could have carried her.

Four of the privateer's men, who had been hurt, were brought on shore in the boat, and placed immediately under the care of Dr. Gordon. Before night the whole of the crew, thirty-five men and the captain, were safely landed at the village, and every comfort afforded them that our present situation would admit.

In consultation with Mr. Rowley, I determined to borrow the Lord's day, and work, as our need was pressing; and dedicate an early day, in lieu, to fasting and prayer, which we might hope in mercy would be accepted. This I made known at night to the people; and we proceeded on Sunday morning, at daylight, the day being fine and the weather settled, to repair our most urgent damages. The Captain of the privateer, at the same time being supplied with boats, attended by Martin, Purdy, and the two New Englanders, was sent off to endeavour to save what stores he could from his vessel; with directions to land them on the north-west end of Edward's Island, and there make an encampment with spars and sails for their reception, and the accommodation of his men. I gave orders that provisions should be sent off daily from the village, by boat, to a little bay within a hundred yards of the place intended for their encampment, but on the hither side, opposite German Town.

During the greater part of the week, every person in the settlement was actively employed one way or other, in repairing the injuries sustained from the hurricane, and in furnishing supplies to the privateer's crew. As I knew Drake must soon sail for Jamaica, I was under the necessity of en-

gaging part of my time in writing official despatches to the Secretary of State, descriptive of my late unpleasant mission to Porto Bello. And I did not omit writing a private letter to Lord Harrington on the subject, who had always manifested a feeling towards me, separate from his official situation. Letters were also got ready by my dear wife, and my sister, for Awbury; and I wrote, besides, some to Jamaica, also one to my banker in London, and another to my uncle at Bristol.

On Friday we held a solemn fast; and on the following Sunday, divine service was observed with due solemnity; after which, Mr. Rowley christened Drake's dear little girl "Eliza." The privateer's men remained at their work as usual; but I sent a message to the Captain, requesting him to come to prayers: this he treated with derision, only laughing at the messenger, by whom he sent back rather a profane, and therefore a rude answer.

Drake sailed with his prize on Tuesday the 15th, and my brother accompanied him, taking with him the 6000 dollars that Van Kempen had sent from Porto Bello, and about 14,000 more, which he had lately amassed by commerce. Drake told me I must not expect his return under a month, for the schooner required new sheathing, and many other repairs. On his taking leave, I gave him a memorandum of some things required for our private use. Diego, who then stood by at the time, eagerly said, — "And 100 cats, Captain Drake." — "Thank you, Master Diego," I exclaimed, "I had forgot that most important commission. Bring us a good complement of rat killers, but not quite 100." —

"Not one too much, sir," resumed Diego; "the rats very powerful, sir." — "Very well," replied Drake, "I'll see to it, Master Diego."

The captain of the privateer would neither send any one to Jamaica in the Porghee, nor write by Captain Drake, nor give any clue to whom his vessel belonged; which induced us to suspect there was something wrong about him and his vessel; but I could not guess what. He himself was an Anglo-American, named Barnes; his crew, whites, mulattoes, and blacks; some of all nations; something like ourselves in that respect. The Porghee was not two days gone, before this fellow and his people began to manifest not only ungrateful, but insubordinate and rebellious conduct. Although they were well supplied with provisions every morning, a strong party of them went over to German Town, where they took away fowls, and behaved, moreover, with great indecency to some of the women. On hearing this, I sent Dr. Gordon to them, with a threat of stopping their supplies, if they did not conduct themselves properly. The threat appeared to have the desired effect, with regard to their manners on shore; but a few days after, having learnt that they had ceased to attempt the removal of any thing more from the wreck, I sent a message to Martin, ordering him to return with the Avon and the other boats, but to leave one canoe. The captain, on being told this, absolutely refused to send his men round with the boats, or to suffer Martin and Purdy to get under sail with the Avon; but obliged them to return in the canoe, which I had despatched with my mes-

sage, and which was intended to be left for the accommodation of the strangers. I was not a little astonished when Martin re-appeared without the boats, and described to me what had passed; but I was doubly astonished, when he said, "They take away the boat from German Town, sir,—privateer, no English privateer at all, sir, no more than *buccaneer;* rob, plunder, and kill every body."

This was a very unpleasant business. The villain had all our boats, excepting my barge, and two canoes; and I now had sufficient reasons for considering him an arrant pirate, and for believing, that his intention might be to put to sea in the Avon, with his most valuable effects, and rob, and plunder the settlement for sea stock; and perhaps take all the other boats with him, for his better accommodation. I, however, dissembled my displeasure, which induced him to think we were afraid of him. Provisions were forwarded the next morning as usual, with a civil message, requesting the boats; to which he returned a surly answer, saying—"He was not done with them;" at the same time making requisition of certain things to be sent the next day, in addition to the customary supply. When I received his message, I could scarcely suppress the anger I felt rising in my breast at his insolence and ingratitude; and from this moment I lost no time in making the best dispositions in my power, to get our whole *band* together, so as to transport them to Allwood's Bay by ten o'clock that night, which was very quickly and quietly accomplished.

Sergeant Craig supplied every man's cartouche

box with twelve rounds of ball cartridge; and, that we might not look quite like ragamuffins, he made the men dress. And this was the more necessary, as I learned from Martin that the fellows had saved both half-pikes and cutlasses from the wreck, and also fire arms, though he believed no gunpowder.

By eleven o'clock our men were formed in double rank in front of Allwood's house. At the same time I despatched the barge round with Diego and his own crew, accompanied by Martin and Purdy, all well armed, with directions to seize the Avon and the other boats, or to prevent their escape, should any of the pirates be embarked in them. I gave the barge time to get round the headland, calculating she would afterwards keep way with us, and I then marched with the whole body, about sixty men, through the narrow pass below Spring Hill. In an hour we arrived at the further end of Long Bay, where we halted, and fixed bayonets; and in ten minutes more I surrounded the canvass sheds of the pirates, by five divisions, of twelve men each. I immediately detached one party, to the western beach, under Sergeant Craig; my object there being to possess myself of the Avon, and the other boats. In an instant the fellows were on the alert, but evidently in great consternation; the captain hallooing out, "Cutlasses!" On which I said, in a loud voice, "That every man of his should instantly be shot, who appeared with a pike or cutlass." I spoke loud enough to be heard by the whole party. But some of his fellows made an instant rush, with cutlasses in their hands, towards the beach. These desperadoes were immediately fired on by our men

nearest to them, who had given way to let them pass. On which, or in a few minutes after, they were attacked by Serjeant Craig's party, and by Diego and his crew, who had just landed; to whom they instantly surrendered. But the Captain still was not disposed to yield, although some of his men had already fallen. I was therefore obliged to order the people to charge the villains. Young Allwood was cut down at the onset, and another man of ours also: but our bold fellows pushed forward on them, like brave soldiers, at once overpowering them. But even then we found much difficulty in completely subduing and securing them, they being desperate ruffians, and their Captain fighting like a badger in a corner of the rock. As fast, however, as we could do it, they were tied, two and two together, with their own ropes; and I took special care to have the Captain pinioned, and otherwise well bound, and placed alone. The whole crew, except two killed and five wounded, were now made to sit together on the sand for the present, with a guard round them. Diego's barge party, which had landed just after the volley was fired, having done their parts, were now sent back to the boats, with some additional hands; to get the craft round by the north end of the island, as quickly as possible.

My thoughts soon turned on those left at home; and in consequence I despatched two messengers, to make all speed by the way we came, to inform Mrs. Drake and the women at Allwood's Bay that the pirates were secured; and thence to proceed over to the mansion by a canoe, with the like

intelligence to Lady Seaward: then go forward to Peccary Field, and send on some of the negro women to German Town, and to the Doctor's house, and to Soldiers' Town, with the news. For I felt that my own dear wife, and every other man's dear wife, besides our kind-hearted minister, might not be without great anxiety on the occasion; although no one could have expected that fellows almost unarmed, would have offered resistance to a body of well-appointed men, double their numbers.

Doctor Gordon took charge of the wounded men on the field; and at dawn of day, the two men killed were buried where they fell. The Avon, and the other boats arrived from the opposite side of the island, soon after morning broke: and as it was my intention to put all the secured prisoners into this large boat, and tow her over to the black rock below the village, I thought it right first to examine their pockets; to take away knives, or any other destructive instrument, they might have about them. In doing this, I discovered a little bag in the Captain's pocket, which contained emeralds of some value; likewise some Portuguese Johannas, and moidores, in his purse. The men, also, were despoiled of some gold, a good deal of silver, and a few knives: and although it was a tedious process, I noted down with my pencil every man's name, and what had been taken from him.

The Captain remained perfectly sullen: he was an ugly black-whiskered fellow, looking like a wild boar tied for the slaughter. But some of the men were conciliatory, saying a good deal; enough

to let us know there were plenty of pieces of eight, and some smaller money, in bags under the canvass sheds. My first object, after the arrival of the boats, was to despatch the barge with the Doctor and wounded men, to be lodged with their comrades, the four hurt in the shipwreck. Young Allwood, and the other wounded man of ours, who was a negro of my brother's household, were sent to their respective homes, their wounds not being dangerous; and there were also some slight hurts on both sides, of still less consequence, not worth mentioning. The barge being gone with the wounded, I was in no hurry to send the other fellows off; but made them remain on the strand, until I wrote an inventory of every thing taken, in their presence. There was not any article of value, besides the coin; of which there were 9000 pieces of eight, in bags, and four bags of piastres, amounting to 4,300 pieces of eight more. There were thirty-six cutlasses, as many half pikes, twenty old muskets, five hangers, one of which was very handsome, a parcel of damaged sails and spars, some bales of silk, and other things. It came out, before we had done, that it had been their intention to have built a small vessel out of the remains of the wreck; with which they intended to depart; but as the Captain thought the Avon might do just as well, he said it would save a great deal of time and trouble, if they would seize her: and they confessed that they did intend to put his plan into immediate execution: but where he was to sail with her, they did not know, or would not tell.

By nine o'clock, Diego returned with the barge.

The good old man had made a point of seeing Lady Seaward, to assure her that I was well, and that I would soon appear with the prisoners. All the bullion and arms were put into his boat, and the prisoners into the Avon. The other boats took the Avon in tow. The non-commissioned officers, and the three artillery-men, were the only persons reserved for a guard. The other people were sent off to their respective habitations. Indeed, I was anxious to despatch them to their homes; for this was the season for getting in the crops, and they had been much hindered by various incidental circumstances.

My dear wife, with Mr. and Mrs. Rowley, and Rosalie, with kind-hearted Mistress Rota, were all upon the beach to greet me on my landing. My beloved Eliza caught my hand, as I stepped from the boat. "Welcome, my Edward," she said; "is all well?" — "All is well, my love," I replied; "by the mercy of God, we have been rescued from the perfidy of those villains." — "You look pale and fatigued, Sir Edward," said Mr. Rowley; "come up, and take breakfast, which is ready waiting for you." He would have given me his arm, but that my dear Eliza would not concede to any human being: so, ordering Diego and his men to bring up the bullion and the arms, I leaned on one who was born to lean on me; and we walked up quietly together, followed by our friends. On entering the hall, when I took off my hat my dear wife perceived my hair matted with blood. "You are wounded, Edward," she exclaimed; "do you know it?"—"No, love," I re-

plied, "I am not wounded; why do you think so?" She then put my hand on my head, where I found sure enough that I had received a slight cut; but on taking away the hair, it was seen to be of no importance.

At breakfast, I detailed to our friends all that had occurred. To many, such a recital would have occasioned no emotions but such as might arise from sentiments of indignation, at the ungrateful perfidy of the pirate and his crew: but Mr. Rowley lamented over their lost condition, as sinful men; and my tender Eliza dropped a tear, when I said, "Two of them were killed, and buried on the spot where they fell."

After breakfast, I took Mr. Rowley with me to the village, to visit the wounded men. We found Doctor Gordon with them. He had placed them comfortably on mattresses, and had dressed their wounds; and he now requested of me two persons to attend on them; which I immediately granted; and gave orders for every thing he might want, to be supplied from the mansion, for their convenience. We now walked to the plank-house; before which all the prisoners were standing. I desired Serjeant Craig to unpinion the Captain, but to keep his legs fettered, and then confine him in the plank-house; where a sentry must always be kept over him. All the other fellows, who amounted to twenty-four, were marched within the cave storehouse stoccado. I told them, I knew they were pirates, without letter of marque or commission; and that as such, every one of them was liable to be hung; but now was the time for

any who chose to save themselves, to come forward and depose to the facts of their Captain's conduct; and that within an hour I would send to see who were disposed to speak the truth. This was declared in English, in French, in Spanish, and in Dutch, by different persons I had provided for that purpose. Mr. Rowley and myself now returned home, leaving an artillery sentinel at the gate.

Within the hour, two men came forward, and were brought to the mansion. They were Englishmen, and Cornishmen from Mivigissey. They stated, that they had entered with the pirate, to save their lives; that the vessel they first belonged to had been plundered and burned by the pirate; and all the rest of the crew, with their Captain, been made to *walk the plank*. They detailed enormities I will not repeat: but stated, that the pirate had a rendezvous, where another like himself resorted to, on a small island near the Mosquito shore. I took the depositions of these men, before Mr. Rowley; and then placed them again in confinement, but separate from the others, in a house of the village. I desired two more witnesses, of a different nation, which I soon found in a Frenchman and a Spaniard, who, on being examined, substantiated what the Englishmen had said; adding some other circumstances, that had happened prior to their capture. I took depositions from these men also; and this was enough. I then sent them to the same place where I had lodged the Englishmen.

I was determined not to allow the great body of villains to eat the bread of idleness; and as our people had been much interrupted by them, in the

field labour, now so pressing, I ordered the twenty that were confined within the stoccado, to be divided among the settlers, and set to work to-morrow morning, tied by the leg, two and two: Diego being instructed to employ the four *king's evidences* on our own grounds, at the silk-cotton-tree plantation.

Early the next morning, twenty cutlasses were distributed among the most discreet men of our different settlements, and the pirates divided among them. But before they were marched off from the stoccado, they were given to understand that if any of them attempted to run away from their work, or from the place they were sent to, they should be shot. Indeed, all this precaution seemed necessary; for rope-chains were but packthread fastenings to such daring renegadoes. I, however, ventured to trust to the precautions I had taken with respect to the men; but the smith was ordered to make substantial irons, for the legs of the pirate Captain, at which he worked night and day till they were finished. And I was glad when they were put on; for this ruffian breathed nothing but vengeance and defiance. I, however, kept him on biscuit and water, and obliged him to pick oakum for his pastime and maintenance.

The Avon had been much injured during her late employment; it was therefore necessary that she should be repaired; and as I could well spare Derrick, my bondman and ship-carpenter, the boat was hauled up, and he and his apprentice set to work to put her in thorough order. I was the more disposed to do this at the present time, as by

taking part of a plank out of her bottom, until every thing else but the calking and painting were done, I should be relieved of apprehension as to the pirates putting into effect any conspiracy they might form to carry her off, and make their escape.

The agricultural operations now went on apace; every one being employed, and the additional piratical hands giving great assistance. The wounded men were gradually recovering, and every thing proceeded orderly and well. There was, however, no muster-day on the following Saturday. But we observed the sabbath as usual, and brought the delinquents up to the hallowed spot, as possibly some good might come of it. On the following Saturday, the 2d of February, the labours of the field being nearly finished, I felt myself at liberty to resume our military muster; the pirates now being within the cave stoccado, before which we paraded.

When our men were drawn up, I addressed them on the subject of the late encounter on Edward's Island. I told them, that the persons we had made prisoners were pirates, —miscreants that plundered all nations; who, not having the fear of God before their eyes, ran forward in a career of wickedness, carrying death and destruction in its path, to every one they could overcome; but now ending, as all wickedness does end, in their own destruction. "But," added I, turning round to the piratical crew, who stood close up to the bars of the stoccado, "evil as has been your conduct to us, it shall be my endeavour to save your lives; and I hope the law will be satisfied with

taking that of your Captain only. Turn, therefore, to the God of Mercy, who has put this lenity into my heart, but whom you have long forgotten, or perhaps never knew, and pray to him that he may influence the minds of men in power to desire to save you, as I do." Then again addressing our own people, I said—"My brave fellows! you are all entitled to my best thanks, for you all did your duty cheerfully and unostentatiously. Considerable booty, in silver, has been taken; and I shall lose no time in petitioning the King of England to allow me to divide it among you, in such proportions as he may direct." I then left them to go through their evolutions; which they commenced by giving me three hearty cheers.

In the evening, when Serjeant Craig came to me for orders, he told me that Barnes, the pirate Captain, said, he did not think, when the King's schooner sailed, there were above seven men-at-arms left on the island;—that he was thunderstruck, when he and his party were surrounded by soldiers,—he could scarcely believe his eyes, and for a few minutes thought he must be dreaming;—that if he had known how it was, he would have put our pipe out the night before,—he would have given the Governor promotion! "The rascal had the hardihood to tell you this, Craig?" said I. "Yes, sir," he replied; "and seemed to have no other regret, than his not having done it."

On the next day, which was the sabbath, our good minister preached expressly to the deluded men; but I did not admit their Captain. He was kept in close confinement at the plank-house, with

a sentry over him. However, in the course of the week, Mr. Rowley desired permission to visit him in his clerical capacity; which I readily granted.

On Monday morning, I turned out the pirate crew in a body, and told them, that their fate, perhaps, depended on their orderly behaviour; that I was about to try them, by sending them altogether to complete a road on the opposite island. They promised fairly; and as soon as arrangements were made, I sent the whole gang, excepting the king's evidences, and the wounded men, to Allwood's Bay; placing over them as a guard the three artillerymen, with orders to see them finish the spiral road. It was to be made five feet in width, up to the summit of the Sugar-loaf Hill, agreeably to the plan Drake had once explained to me; and which he had attempted to begin, by cutting a kind of footpath in the direction he meant the road to be formed.

The hurry of our agricultural operations being over, I ordered a canvass shed to be erected at the foot of the hill for the pirates, well stoccadoed round; and for greater security, fire-arms were deposited with the settlers at the bay. All this was necessary; for the work to be done, required that the fellows should have pickaxes, and shovels, and spades, — arms of no despicable quality in such hands. But they went on during the week, and afterwards, quietly and orderly in their labour.

CHAP. VII.

On the 26th of February, Van Kempen returned with the galliot and schooner from Porto Bello. His expedition had been successful beyond expectation. He had brought the merchandise to a market at his own price, and had purchased the cargo of a prize for a mere song, because she was not seaworthy to send to Jamaica. On Wednesday, the 5th of March, Drake made his appearance, and came to anchor in the afternoon. He brought a schooner with him under convoy, which my brother had chartered at Kingston to take in goods purposely for the Spanish market. But the Mary, my uncle's brig, also came in with him; that vessel having arrived at Jamaica while he was there. We were all glad to see Taylor's vessel in company with the Porghee. I expected some commissions by him of no ordinary kind; besides, we all were looking anxiously for letters from England. Drake brought an officer of engineers with him. This officer had been sent from England to join Admiral Vernon, but arrived too late by a few days, the Admiral having sailed from Jamaica on the 25th of February; to which place he had gone after the great January storm, by which he had suffered severely. The Porghee too, had been obliged to wait for repair until all the large ships received their out-

fit; so that she had not been able to sail for Seaward Islands, before the first of the present month.

I greeted my brave fellow with a hearty welcome on his landing, for I was heartily glad to see him again; but being impatient to see his Maria, he hastily introduced Captain Frazer to me, and then was about to make his escape to the other side of the water. "I must go to Maria," said he; "but will come again before sunset." — "Not so fast, my dear friend," I exclaimed; "I cannot allow you to go to Spring Hill, without first telling you that it is occupied by pirates." Drake stared at me; and then smiled, rather questionably, directing an enquiring eye to Mr. and Mrs. Rowley. "True enough:" answered the reverend gentleman. Drake now rested his somewhat agitated look on my dear Eliza. "This mystery is not well!" she said: "go, Captain Drake; perhaps your dear wife, with her baby, is anxiously expecting you. It is true, there are pirates at Spring Hill; but they are prisoners."—"But what am I to make of this, Sir Edward?" exclaimed Drake. "The fact is," returned I, "we have been under the necessity of seizing those fellows you saved from the wreck. I have discovered them to be pirates; and there are now twenty of them, under a guard, employed in making the corkscrew road you projected, from the base to the summit of Sugarloaf Hill."—"I should like to see it," exclaimed the engineer. "We shall have the pleasure of showing it to you to morrow, Captain Frazer," I replied. "Now, my dear Drake," continued I, "speed home, and do not let me see your face here again to-night; but to-

morrow, as early as you please. There are many questions I wish to ask you, and some things I desire to tell you. Now be off; Captain Frazer shall be my guest the while." Drake did not wait another bidding; but was making his escape in right earnest, when Master Diego, like a black genius, seized on the unlucky wight, exclaiming—"*Los Gatos, Capitan nobile!*"—"What the devil do you want, Diego?" replied Drake, hastening away, with my zealous *major domo* at his heels. "The cats, Captain Drake!" vociferated he. "O, there are two sacks full of them," rejoined Drake. "Your pardon, *Capitan nobile*," replied Diego, making a dead stand, and bowing profoundly; "I ask pardon for great bad manners, sir." Drake was the best tempered fellow in the world; so, turning round, he took off his hat, and having returned Master Diego's low bow, made a precipitate retreat to the boat, and rowed off, with all expedition, for his *château.*

After coffee, Captain Frazer and myself walked out to see the lions of the place. I was desirous to show him the great silk-cotton-tree, and some other things. But he directed himself immediately to the battery. I therefore bent my course with him at once from the mansion, to that point. He surveyed it for some time without making any observations, but asked me what other batteries I had on the island. I told him, we had only one gun on the height above us. He said he would like to go up and see it. I wished him to have a mule, but he preferred climbing the ascent on foot; and as I now thought myself quite strong enough; and as

the cool of the evening was approaching, I offered to accompany him on foot also. Sergeant Craig was in attendance; so we ascended the promontory all together. From the flag-staff, Captain Frazer had a bird's eye view of the islands, their channels, and harbour. He asked many questions respecting all these points, on which I was able to satisfy him tolerably well. We then returned to the mansion, the stars appearing as we descended the hill. Captain Taylor of the Mary was waiting to see me; I therefore turned our military guest over to the ladies, and went apart with Taylor, to talk over matters of a different interest to that which had just occupied my attention.

Next morning I laid the chart of the islands before Captain Frazer, by his desire. He entered on the subject of our defensive arrangement, as Drake came in; and he soon made it clear to me, that the ten guns were placed in a worse than useless position. He said, where they now were they could make no defence against the entrance of ships; and that the battery was too weak to do any thing, after a force had got in: in fact, it would only serve to draw a destructive fire upon my own residence. He thought the rock below the conical hill, was the best place for a battery; there, the southern passage was open to its fire, and by such a situation it would command the harbour in every direction. "And," continued he, "if you were to place a large gun, with a depressing carriage, on the summit of the hill above the rock, (which you can do easily, as you are making a spiral road to the top of it,) that gun would command the fort

below. So that even if the fort were taken, you could beat the enemy out of it again in a trice." — "You are right, sir," said I, "and your ideas shall be put into immediate execution." — "Well," he replied, "we will visit the opposite side, and I shall then be able to speak more positively on the subject."

After breakfast, we went to Allwood's Bay, and reconnoitred the rock opposite the great conical hill. Here Captain Frazer now expressed himself as being quite certain of the eligibility of the plan he had suggested. We then inspected the working gang, under the artillery guard; who, by this time, had got half way to the hill's summit, and therefore had made more than two thirds of the road. Many large trees had been felled during this operation; and, now stripped of their branches, they lay for timber on the grounds below. Drake was delighted with what had been done, and by the plan in contemplation.

When we had winded up the spiral road, until it brought us immediately opposite to the black rock on which the new fort was to be constructed, Captain Frazer suddenly stood still, and said — "We will throw a drawbridge over the narrow pass, from this point, to our intended fort. I think we stand twenty-four feet above the pass. This must be the only entrance to the fort. Such a position will add much to its security." I was much pleased with the idea; and admired the sagacity, which, in a moment, saw its application to the situation of our proposed new battery. On our return down the hill, I spoke some encouraging

things to the miserable men; whom I sent for from their work above, to hear what I had to say to them. I expressed to them my satisfaction in what they had done; and said, I had little doubt but that the happiest consequences would result from a steady perseverance in their present orderly and industrious conduct.

After paying our respects to Mrs. Drake, we proceeded in my barge to reconnoitre the positions at the northern entrance of the harbour. After some time, Captain Frazer fixed on the steep rocky eminence situated towards the N. E. point of Edward's Island, for two guns; which would at once command the northern channel, cover Peccary Field Bay, and co-operate with the fort to be built opposite Spring Hill, in scouring the whole harbour; also at the same time be within long range of a forty-two pounder, if one could be got, and placed on the summit of that conical hill; by which, this second new fort, as well as the other, would be untenable by an enemy. "And," said he, "fifty men ought to defend that conical hill, against a thousand. Nothing but mortars can touch the position."

Having completed the object of our survey, and being near the spot where the pirates' vacant encampment yet stood, I could not resist the desire I had to show it to Captain Frazer, and to Drake. When on the ground, I told them the story of the conspiracy, and fought the battle over again. "The scoundrels!" exclaimed Frazer. "Ah, but brave fellows, Sir Edward!" cried Drake; "fine fellows in a good cause! See how they laid

about them with their cutlasses! if the King of Spain's guards had been opposed to them, it would have been the same." — "That's all very fine," observed Captain Frazer, "but their cause was a bad one, and that is the present question; and if they get their deserts, every man of them must be hung." — "I own that; but I have promised to save them all, if I can," said I, "except the Captain. And it is my intention to send him, by and by, in the Porghee, to Jamaica to be tried. Four of his crew have impeached him with plundering vessels of different nations, and forcing their captains, passengers, and crews *to walk the plank*." — "Walk the plank!" enquired Captain Frazer; "what is that?" — "It is," I replied, "nothing more nor less than forcing them to walk overboard into the sea."

Having finished our conversation, we took a peep at the wreck with the glass. "I would advise you, Sir Edward," said Drake, "to order all the things saved from the wreck, to be sold in lots, and the hull of the vessel also, and let it be done by vendue; by which you will close your responsible account to whomsoever the things may belong, if they don't fetch five dollars." I thanked Drake for this piece of sound counsel; and as I was aware that the Porghee must proceed forthwith to Porto Bello, I made it my first business, on returning home, to order proclamation to be made, fixing the very next morning for the public sale, that it might not take place after Drake's departure: in which case it might give an evil opportunity to the pirates, to take advantage of the absence of the people from their homes.

After dinner, Captain Frazer was so kind as to draw out plans for the two forts he had suggested; and made the model of a depressing carriage, for the large gun to be mounted on the summit of the Sugarloaf Hill: which sort of gun, he said, he had no doubt could be easily obtained at Porto Bello; as most likely it was in contemplation to demolish the fortifications of that place entirely.

On the following day many of the people attended the auction; but my brother and Van Kempen were too much pressed for time, to go, having matters of much greater importance to attend to. The clerk of the Porghee was appointed vendue master, and got his per centage on the sale accordingly. The hull and spars were bought by Allwood and his son Manus. The torn sails, the cordage, some boxes of damaged cochineal, a few bales of damaged silk, and some other articles, valuable before they had been drenched by the sea, together with some smaller things of little note, were purchased chiefly by the people of the village, and others. The whole only netting 432 dollars.

By Saturday the 8th, the shipping arrangements were completed. I had advised Captain Taylor to go to Porto Bello with the Mary, and sell on my uncle's account, instead of disposing of any part of his cargo here: and much to Van Kempen's credit, he strongly urged the same; although, he owned, it was against his own immediate interest to do so. But Taylor demurred; saying, "Mr. William Seaward was a strict and straight-forward man; and so particular, in not allowing any de-

viation from his orders, that he could not venture to do as we suggested." He therefore sold to Van Kempen and my brother, whatever they pleased to select, at the prices affixed by my uncle to the invoice; taking bills on England for the amount. The galliot was loaded with the goods purchased from the Mary, and the chartered schooner was full of the merchandise brought in her from Kingston. With these vessels, Van Kempen sailed under convoy of the Porghee, for Porto Bello; and the Mary went out at the same time for Honduras, to take advantage of the escort for a short distance. I wrote a letter to Admiral Vernon, by Captain Drake, requesting two forty-eight, and fourteen eighteen pound guns, with fifty or a hundred rounds of shot for each. And I desired Drake to procure for me two or three competent stone-masons, if possible; offering them good wages, and a safe return, should they desire to go back. On receiving my letter, and last instructions, he and Captain Frazer took their leave; my best thanks being returned to the engineer, for his very valuable services in pointing out to me the proper way of defending our harbour.

We had no military muster to-day, but Diego mustered his cats, whose rank and file fell short of a hundred by fourscore and ten; however he was rejoiced to see even the few that had been brought. And having spoken to Van Kempen on the subject, he hoped in time to be master of an ample supply. But indeed we had all reason to be glad of the present importation, if it were only to keep the rats out of the dwelling-houses; which they

had already begun to infest, as well as the store-houses, although not in great numbers.

In a few days the Tom Cod sailed for Jamaica, with her loading of the merchandise brought from Porto Bello, but my brother remained with us. After the departure of all the vessels, I looked closely into every thing at the settlement, seeing that every one was industriously occupied in their calling, even to the children. I visited every place, and saw that the damage done by the hurricane had been repaired, as far as the power of man could do it. I had my own stoccadoed pen, with the fowls' house, and other buildings for the stock, rebuilt substantially in two separate enclosures, behind the houses of Diego and Derrick; leaving the ground at the back of the mansion, clear and open. By this alteration we were relieved from much inharmonious noise, and other nuisances. And in a little time I caused the central point of the open space to be occupied by a beautiful little *jet d'eau*, conveyed through a small leaden pipe from the spring above the silk-cotton-tree, and made to play into a stone basin, which had been brought out to me in my uncle's brig. This *jet d'eau* was a delightful object, as looked at from the dining hall through the great door to the east; especially when the sun rose high enough above the promontory to shine upon it; a rainbow was then seen in the air, quite close to it. And now that the pen and poultry houses were removed, the finely-wooded hill appeared through the shining spray.

On the 26th, Drake came back from Porto Bello, *well laden;* and had left Van Kempen behind, with

the two merchant vessels. The Porghee had arrived there with her convoy, on the very day the Admiral returned from bombarding Carthagena, and Drake lost no time in waiting on him with my letter, and to introduce Captain Frazer. "I am glad to see you, sir," said the Admiral to Drake. "But what are *you* sent here to do?" was his salutation to the Captain of Engineers, who bowed, and presented his letters. The Admiral went aside, until he had read them, and mine; then returning, said — "Mr. Drake, you may take away as many iron guns, and as much shot, from the batteries of Porto Bello as you please. Captain Frazer, I have no doubt you are a very clever fellow in your way; but the Captain of the Diamond, is also a very clever fellow, a capital engineer, both ashore and afloat: so, if you please, you may take the command of Gloria Castle, or any other fort, or place here; but I will not embark you in my ship."

Drake, having got a *carte blanche* for iron cannon, and shot, helped himself in the course of the week to sixteen large guns; two of which were calibered for shot of forty-six pounds' weight; the others for just half that weight of metal. These sized guns are awkward for an English fortress, there not being any English shot that will fit them; but Drake had taken pretty good care to provide against that circumstance; for he not only brought away their carriages complete, rammers and all, but also above fifty tons of shot, and several bales of unfilled paper and woollen cartridges. He helped himself also to some iron crow bars, and a few wimple-jennies, that were of great service. He was

also fortunate enough to succeed in procuring four regular stonemasons, natives of Old Spain, at 3 dollars per week each; their provisions and safe return being also promised.

The Admiral sent for Drake after some days; it was on the 21st. He then talked to him about the prize, saying there should be 5*l.* a man, head-money. He was, however, so well pleased when he heard that his share was at least 10,000 dollars upon the cargo, that he said — "What can I do to serve you, Mr. Drake?" — "If you will send Sir Edward Seaward some gunpowder, with the cannon," replied Drake, "I know it will be acceptable. And although it is for the public service, nothing could gratify him, or myself, more." — "Sit down, sir," said the Admiral. He then wrote an order for forty barrels of Spanish gunpowder; which he gave to Drake, with a letter for myself; ordering him to be ready to put to sea with the squadron on the morrow. Drake took in the gunpowder for me, and a few cats for Diego; and sailed with the Admiral in the morning: but when out of port, was ordered to proceed direct for Seaward Islands; the squadron at the same time shaping its course for Punta Toro, to make an attack on the Castle of Chargre, at the embouchure of that river. The Admiral's letter to me was in the usual style, short and pithy:— "I have sent you some Spanish guns, and, at Mr. Drake's request, something to cram them with. He says you have taken some pirates; send them to me, as they are *men at arms*, I will find work for them. Yours, E. V. — P. S. I'll send you some sick, and a vessel to repair now and then;

Mr. Drake says you have brave means and good will. Some day or other I may take a look at you. E. V."

When I had read this letter, which was after Drake had finished his recital of what had occurred, I said — "Your zeal is great, my dear friend; thank you for what you have accomplished. Bring the masons on shore, and let them be comfortably lodged in the village for the present. But I fear we shall disappoint the Admiral's expectations, as to refitting any of his vessels as he would wish, or in giving a competent asylum to his sick; we will, however, do our best. Now speed you to the other side, and bring your wife over to dinner. We will then make some arrangements for future operations." I walked with him down to the beach, and on our way we met Master Diego, who had been on the look out for the needful. His boat's crew were at his heels, every one with a fine cat under his arm; Diego carrying a monstrous beast as black as himself. "Thank you, Captain Drake," he said; "will shake rats now, sir, out of their skins."

My dear sister came over with her husband to dinner, as I had desired: after which, he and I made arrangements over a cigar, for putting Captain Frazer's plan into immediate effect. In discussing the business, we found the cigars very handy in helping us through some of the intricacies of our subject. By arranging a given number of them on the table, the sides and angles of the fort to be built at Spring Hill, were delineated agreeable to Captain Frazer's plan: a couple of them, placed

parallel to each other, separated about an inch, represented the drawbridge; and a dozen of the ends of those that had been smoked, served to represent the guns when mounted. Thus, by help of the cigars, having the advantage of both fire and smoke, to assist our contemplations in the formation of the battery, we at length concluded on all that was to be done; our dear friends the while looking on, and listening to us, not a little amused by the tobacco fortification.

On the following morning, I went over to Allwood's Bay; and being joined by Drake, it delighted me to witness the complete manner in which the spiral road to the summit of the Sugarloaf Hill, had been finished: but it was necessary to make a platform on the top. This we now marked out, twenty-four feet in diameter; informing the artillery-men, that a forty-six pound gun was to be mounted on it. With this piece of intelligence they were highly delighted. The four Spanish masons now came over from the village, and were lodged with honest Xavier. I met them at the house where they were, and laid Captain Frazer's plan before them on the table. One of these men was remarkably intelligent; and I was also happy in finding a competent interpreter, in my old negro friend Xavier. I told the masons they should have twelve labourers, who must quarry the stone on the spot, or near it; and that the work must be set about without loss of time; and that I would take care to provide plenty of lime, before they could want it. Twelve of the pirate labourers, attended by two of the artillery-men, were then

appointed to work at the fort; leaving one with the remaining fellows, to complete the platform.

The next day the Porghee discharged her powder, which was conveyed to the magazine. She then went over to Spring Hill rock, where she put on shore one forty-six pound gun, with twelve of the others, and a large portion of the shot; returning in the evening to her anchorage. On the morning after, a forty-six pound gun, with a proportion of shot, were landed upon the rocks below Fort George, by hauling alongside: and the same day she disembarked the other two guns, and the remainder of the shot, on the rock where the other battery was to be built.

While Drake was thus employed, I wrote my letters to the Governor of Jamaica, in which I enclosed the depositions regarding the pirates; and on the 29th the Porghee sailed for Kingston, with the pirate Captain, Bartholemy Barnes, and the four men of his crew that impeached him. Before Drake took his leave, I gave him an abstract from the list I had made of the things taken from the pockets of the pirate's crew the morning they were seized. This abstract related to the four men he was about to convey to Jamaica, as witnesses; and with it I gave him their things also, directing him to restore them if the men should be liberated. I told the Governor in my letter, that Admiral Vernon would find use for the pirate's crew; and, indeed, it might be just as well to suffer them to be killed by the Spaniards, as to take the trouble of trying them, and hanging them ourselves. In my opinion, an example was all that should be desired;

and the proper one would be the Captain, Bartholemy Barnes.

Drake returned to us again on the 14th of April; after having delivered the culprit into the hands of justice, and witnessed the termination of the affair. Barnes was tried, condemned, and hung in chains on Port Royal Point. The four king's evidences were sent on board men-of-war, on which their money and knives were restored to them by Captain Drake. But there was a strong sensation at Jamaica, against the rest of the crew that remained with me; of which latter circumstance, the people there were ignorant; and nothing saved the men, but an idea of their being already sent to the Spanish main, and in actual offensive operations against the enemy. This business, therefore, was well settled.

Drake brought me letters from England, truly afflicting. My dear and worthy Mr. Goldsmith wrote to me a most distressing account of the condition of the peasantry about him; indeed, of the whole country. The frost had been so severe from Christmas-day, to the time at which he wrote, that all the wheats had been destroyed in the ground; and he said, if it were to continue much longer, a famine must be the consequence. The Severn was frozen for many miles beyond Bristol harbour; and he had heard that a fair was holding on the Thames. The village *elm* had been riven by the frost to its very root; and the main trunk of the great *oak* at *Shellard's Lane*, had been split, if not destroyed. But it was the probable suffering of the poor people, that engaged his attention, and

called for his commiseration and ours. My dear wife took this subject under her peculiar protection; making it, indeed, the daily and almost hourly topic of conversation. The result was, that I wrote to our friend and father, authorising him to remit half the year's rent to my tenants, and to distribute 100*l.* among the poor of *Awbury* and *Hartfield* (in addition to the money already allowed), in such sums and at such times as he might see necessary. To this I most sincerely added our regrets that it was not in our power to send them a supply of flour and other provisions. However, I suggested to Drake, and my brother, the idea of ordering a cargo from Virginia for Bristol; but the war, and other difficulties, soon obliged me to give up the scheme.

Meanwhile Van Kempen had arrived with his vessels; which were sent off direct with their cargoes to Jamaica, consigned to Mr. Green. But the Tom Cod did not return to Seaward Islands with Drake; that vessel having gone to Virginia, under a homeward bound convoy through the Gulf, to carry flour and biscuit to Porto Bello, at Van Kempen's suggestion—the English ships there, being much in want of those articles: indeed, all their provision was bad, both beef and biscuit. I wished she could have taken her cargo to England.

For very many months, there was not a foreign arrival in our harbour; which I attributed to the war with Spain. But on the 23d, a French brig made its appearance off, and was piloted in. She was bound to the Spanish main, but had struck on a reef of rocks somewhere to the south-west of

us; and being very leaky, was glad to get shelter any where. I received the Captain with great civility, telling him his vessel should be repaired. Preparations were accordingly made, the cargo landed, and the vessel hove down. However, in the meantime, Van Kempen and my brother bought all the cargo, and sold him cacao, and other South American produce, cheaper than he could buy it on the main. In a fortnight he put again to sea; having made a better voyage, he said, than if no accident had happened to him; and our merchants, and honest fiscal, had also good reason to be satisfied with the reef that sent him to our port, for they also had made a good thing of it.

Drake had been employed, since his last arrival, in getting one of the largest guns up to the flag-staff on the promontory; whence he then moved the twelve pounder already there, to the face of the precipice, that overlooks the isthmus. And he now set the millwright, smith, and Derrick, to work, to make a depressing carriage on Captain Frazer's plan, for the large gun now at the flag-staff on the promontory; and also one for the other large gun, to be mounted on the summit of Sugarloaf Hill. He was indefatigable at Spring Hill, while the platform was finishing; and also in forwarding the building of the fort, which went on with great spirit. On the 1st of May, he got the other large gun up to the platform, and on the succeeding day carried up the shot, and fixed the gun for service. A new flag-staff was erected in the centre of the platform, and a tent pitched round it, the flag-staff serving for the pole. A parapet wall, of three feet in height, had been built round the plat-

form, upon the circular edge of the steep summit; and a strong gate, nearly seven feet high, with a small tower on each side of it. As the piece of ordnance stationed here, was to be lord and master over all the rest, three gates, similar to the one on the summit, were placed for additional security to the post, in the course of the spiral road: the cutting away of the rock, rendering it difficult, if not impossible, to ascend the hill on either side of them.

By the middle of May, I felt that I could dispense with the labour of some of the pirates, although a busy time of the year: indeed, I was glad to do so; for many of them had become unruly, and, strange to say, more especially those who had been wounded. I therefore picked out ten of the best behaved, to retain with us, and sent off all the others to Porto Bello, giving to each man the money that had been taken from him. The Admiral was not in port when the Porghee arrived, but the gang of pirates sent, was delivered over with my letter to the senior officer.

Drake had the good fortune, on his return, to fall in with a Spanish privateer of fourteen guns, and capture her, after a severe action, in which seven of his men were killed and eight wounded,—nearly half his number; but, happily, he himself escaped without a scratch. It was a moment of exultation, to see the little Porghee coming round the point, with her prize, a vessel more like a sloop of war than a privateer! but a deep anxiety for the safety of our gallant friend, somewhat repressed the exultation, till we saw him leap on shore with his hat

in one hand, and a sheathed cutlass in the other, calling out to me, as I stood on the rocks below Fort George ready to receive him — "There she is, Sir Edward ! ! !"

This affair made work for Doctor Gordon; and he lost no time in attending to it. No distinction was made between our own wounded seamen and the prisoners: they were all lodged in the village, and equally well taken care of. The privateer carried seventy men, thirteen of whom had been killed, and twenty-three wounded: more than the whole number of Drake's crew. There was some valuable merchandise discovered to be on board the prize; cambrics, silks, cloves, and other articles of consideration. These the rascal had plundered out of a Dutchman; and after doing so, he scuttled poor *Mynheer*, and then put the crew on shore upon a small island. But he had also taken an English ship, the *William and Mary*, which he sent into La Guira; but as he could not spare many hands to send with her, he had only trusted the captain and mate to remain on board, the crew having been transferred to the privateer. These were released by the noble achievement of the Porghee; making a welcome addition to Drake's strength, at the moment of the capture.

This event incommoded us greatly. Both vessels required much repair, to enable them to proceed to Jamaica; but the wounded men were the cause of greatest anxiety, especially to my dear wife. The prisoners, too, required a guard; and that was very inconvenient: but I had, however, the consolation to consider how much worse it would have

been, had we not got rid of the greater and worst part of the piratical body, before these unpleasant guests arrived. I therefore quietly and thankfully entered on the arrangements required for the occasion; and had the happiness to command those who faithfully and cheerfully carried them into execution: so that all that was needful was done; and our works, and ordinary business, too, proceeded with little interruption.

Towards the end of June, Drake sailed with his prize for Jamaica; the English seamen taken in her, except two, having entered on board the Porghee. The story of the rich prize she made some months before, had no small weight in determining them to this step: besides, they had seen their new commander was a brave fellow; and, perhaps, they apprehended they might be pressed into some king's ship, they would not like so well, on their arrival at Port Royal, if they went there without being provided already. Thus the Porghee had her complement of men again; without which she could not have proceeded; as it required at least twelve men to navigate the prize. Four of the privateer's crew, who were Dutchmen, and two of the English sailors, that did not enter with Drake, he having filled up his complement, remained at the settlement; and I was glad at their volunteering to do so.

We seized this occasion of writing to England: not only to our friends, but I wrote an official letter to the Secretary of State, with an account of the capture of the piratical band; of the condemnation and execution of the Captain at Jamaica; requesting, in the sequel, that I might be allowed to divide

the money and proceeds among the captors, and to know in what proportions the different persons were to share. By the same opportunity I made a requisition for an artillery serjeant, and nine more artillery-men, from Jamaica; stating reasons which I deemed sufficient. Before Drake left us, he took the liberty of helping himself to a box of cambrics, and another of silks, from the prize; the contents of which he distributed among the ladies, saying, "they should be charged to his account:" and on his departure, he very handsomely made Doctor Gordon a present of 100 dollars, out of his own pocket, for his attendance on the wounded men.

In July, Drake returned, bringing the artillery-men with him; and it rejoiced us all to hear that he had received 22,000 dollars for his own share of the Spanish ship he took in November; and that the privateer was likely to prove a good prize also; as many persons seemed eager to buy her, and the goods she had on board, although not of much bulk, were of great value. The crew of the Porghee were now all flush of money, which they literally threw away among the people at the settlement. Drake remained with us for six weeks: indeed, it was by my particular desire that he did so. The Avon, meanwhile, was fitted with swivel stocks for four musquetoons; and, with twelve men and a midshipman, well armed, was sent to cruise off the small Spanish islands to the southward; the weather being quite settled enough for a boat of her description to go to sea. This was done to satisfy Drake's men; for their money had made them restless. The midshipman put in command of the

Avon had orders to return in ten days, that another officer and other men might take their turn. This was done; and no accident happened to the boat on this service, during all its trips. But although she was nearly thirty days at sea, at different times, she took nothing, only a small black sloop with dye-woods, from the Magdalena River. This vessel I thought too insignificant to send to Jamaica for condemnation, especially as the crew had been landed on St. Andreas. I therefore sold both her and the cargo by auction, and divided the proceeds among the captors. Martin and Purdy bought the sloop, with money they had made by turtling; and my brother and Van Kempen purchased the dye-woods.

By the middle of August, the battery below Spring Hill * was completed, twelve twenty-three pounders mounted, and a flag-staff put up. Then, with some ceremony, I named it, after the gallant Admiral who had sent us the guns, "*Fort Vernon.*" The workmen were now despatched to the other end of Edward's Island, to erect the projected two-gun battery there; and Xavier and Derrick were employed in building a barrack, for eight artillery-men, at Fort Vernon.

As there was no specific duty at present for the Porghee to do, besides cruising, Van Kempen asked me to let her take the galliot, and the prize sloop (which Purdy, very good-naturedly, had named the *Jack Martin*), under convoy to the Bay of

* It appears that Spring Hill, Sugar Loaf Hill, and the Conical Hill, are only different names for the same hill. — Ed.

Honduras, and try what could be done there, as the Porto Bello market was now glutted by English traders. I agreed to his request. He, in consequence, chartered the black sloop; and on Wednesday the 3d of September they sailed for Belize River, taking letters for my cousin at St. George's Key. As Martin and Purdy were now become shipowners, and went in their own vessel, I put the turtling business into the hands of John Stone and Harry Rock, my two sailor boys, whose term of bondage in a very short time would expire.

Ever since the sale of the pirate's hull, Allwood had been busy at intervals breaking her up; by which he had collected her planks and timbers, and a good deal of other timber besides, all brought to the small bay opposite, where the pirates' provisions used to be landed directly under the rock to the north, where the two-gun battery was now erecting. He proposed, with these materials, to build a small schooner at this place; and having consulted me on the subject, I promised him every facility. "As soon as the artillery barrack is finished," said I, "you shall have Allan Derrick and his apprentice; and I will do this for you, because I have, on all occasions, been well satisfied with your conduct: but I now feel something due to the man who lays down the first keel on Seaward Islands. Besides, I wish to show you, Manus Allwood, that I have not forgotten your gallant conduct on the night we attacked the pirates; and for these considerations, I shall make no charge against you for the labour of my bondmen." Manus was gratified every way by what I had said; not only

thanking me, but looking vastly pleased, a tulip blush having risen on his dingy cheek before I was done speaking to him. "Then, sir, if you please," observed the elder Allwood, "I will hire Xavier, with his apprentice, when they have done the work they are upon; and with these men, and ourselves, and our apprentices, we shall make good speed. And may I hope your honour will have no objection for the smith to work for us?" — "Every man who is not a bondman, is free here, Mr. Allwood," I replied, "to do any thing he pleases that is lawful: you have as much right to employ the smith as I have."

By the middle of October, the two-gun battery was finished; and by the help of the carpenters now at work on Allwood's vessel, the sergeant of artillery succeeded in getting up the two guns; and on the evening of the 15th he reported the battery complete, and fit for service. Orders were now given to have all the gun-carriages and guns painted at all the forts; and the persons employed on this business were afterwards directed to paint the great storehouse at the cave, and also the mansion, and all the houses belonging to it, to preserve the wood. This was an expensive and tedious operation, but so necessary that it could not be dispensed with.

The wages to the Spanish masons now amounted to 348 dollars; and as I had engaged to go on paying them, until I could send them home, I set them about building a handsome stone fountain of coral freestone at the village; to be in direct communication with the rock, whence the water first

gushes forth. It was to be done, and was done, on a plan of their own, the Spaniards being well acquainted with such erections. This fountain was made to pour itself through the beautiful mouths of twelve large conchs, into a great reservoir below; the shells being cut across with a saw, so as to separate the spiral end, leaving the opening to the mouth unobstructed. The water was made to flow from the reservoir by conduits, as formerly filling our cistern, and thus irrigating our grounds below the silk cotton tree, and supplying Van Kempen's people with an ample stream, to wash the grated roots of the Indian arrow-root. By this beautiful structure, the charms of the fountain were again displayed in all the elegance of an artful arrangement; but being robbed of their native simplicity, they failed to enchant us as on former days. The villagers, however, now received their water pure and cool, from the mouths of the gushing shells; and I regarded it altogether as a fine achievement.

Before the end of the month, the Tom Cod made his appearance, after rather a disastrous voyage, having run ashore with his cargo of flour and biscuit, near Cape Henry, one of the headlands of the Chesapeake. After being got off, unloaded, repaired, and reloaded, he again sailed, and put into Jamaica, being still rather leaky. There, fortunately, he found the English squadron from the Spanish Main; and at last sold his cargo well. He came down full of other merchandise; and, in a few days after, Drake came in with the galliot and sloop from the Bay of Honduras, having also had a very unpleasant and tedious voyage, although tole-

rably profitable to the merchants: but my cousin had left St. George's Key; therefore my letters to him were brought back.

As the 30th would be the anniversary of the birthday of our august sovereign, I resolved to make it a festival. At sunrise all the colours on the islands were hoisted; and as it was necessary to scale the Spanish guns, the forty-six pounders were fired from the promontory and Sugar-loaf Hill, at the moment their flags went up. We had a grand field-day on the open ground between the mansion and the fort; and all the people, including the crews of the vessels, the Spanish masons, and the ten remaining pirates, were regaled under the canopy of the great silk cotton tree. I gave a fine dinner also at the mansion; and when the King's health was drank, a salute of twenty-one guns was fired from the batteries; beginning at Fort George below us, where the St. George's flag displayed itself; the salute being then taken up and finished by Fort Vernon. The people, still assembled, now cheered; a twenty-gallon cask of Spanish wine having been just served out among them, neither Spaniards nor pirates making any objection to drink to the health of the King of England. At nine o'clock the drums beat; and, to show a good example, all my guests at the mansion went away. The people, observing the movement, of course separated, and retired cheerfully to their respective homes.

Early in November, I settled with the Spanish masons, I hope to their satisfaction; and sent them off in the Porghee to Porto Bello, accompanied by

Van Kempen and the three merchant vessels, to try that market once more. I still retained the ten pirates, finding them not only useful, but orderly; and I had released them from their state of slavery on the King's birthday. I then restored to them the money and other things that had been found in their pockets at the time of their being made prisoners, and told them they should have wages, henceforth, for their labour. These men eventually proved themselves regenerate, in the ordinary acceptation of the word, some of them serving in our vessels as sailors, and two of them settling in the village, and plying as ferrymen between St. George's and Allwood's Bay.

Our numbers were now very much increased, not only by the accession of adult persons, but by births, which had been numerous; and the young generation was springing up around us, almost beyond knowledge; but the most agreeable reflection was in knowing that they were growing up in industry, and in the fear of God.

"Ah, dear Edward!" said my beloved Eliza, as she and I sat one evening retired together on the parapet of the fort, to enjoy the sight of the descending sun; "how delightful is this goodly scene; how smooth the lake; how beautiful the surrounding shores! And how happy the people of these islands, under your protection; how happy I, at this moment, too, in being so near to you, and alone! My heart now dilates with gratitude to our God. I always feel his presence most, when we are separate from every earthly being but ourselves. How gracious he has been to me!

how he has preserved you in moments of great peril; how he has blessed you in every thing! No human power nor foresight could have made this place what it is, without his special favour. Oh, may the people praise him! may *we* ever be grateful to *him*, my Edward!" As she finished speaking, her fair head gradually sunk upon my bosom, shedding such tears as holy angels would love to gather; but which a holier one preserves unseen, as germs of future joy.

Early in December, Drake returned from Porto Bello with his three vessels under convoy; and in a few days after, he proceeded to Jamaica, taking my brother's schooner with him deeply laden. He did not delay on this voyage, but made haste to return home, on account of the approaching stormy season; and came to anchor again with the Tom Cod in company, on the 18th. He brought us letters, one of which was from the Secretary of State, on the subject of the money taken from the pirates. It stated, that an objection had been raised to my request, on the score of its being *droit of admiralty:* but on referring to my *grant*, the objection was overruled; and he had it in command from his Majesty to allow the money and proceeds of the wreck to be shared by myself and the people who had attacked the pirates in their camp, and made them prisoners; saying that I had a right to three eighths of the whole; and that I had permission to divide and distribute the remainder among the persons actually engaged, in such proportions as, in strict justice, I might think them respectively entitled to.

On the 20th, which was Saturday, the muster took place as usual; and I took the occasion to read the Secretary of State's letter; the troops (if I may so call them; and why not, for they are all brave musketeers?) being drawn up round me in a hollow square. When I finished the letter, they gave me three cheers, and I then appointed Monday to pay the money.

On Monday the people assembled on the open ground before the mansion. I stated to them, that there were nine bags with 1000 *pieces of eight*, hammered *cobs* in each; the *cob* being in value 3*s.* 4*d.* English money, but in Jamaica currency 5*s.*: and there were four bags, containing 17,200 *piastres;* each *piastre* being two *ryals*, viz. the fourth of one *cobbed piece of eight.* "That is," continued I, "the fourth of one piece *of eight ryals.* I wish you to understand the value of the coin you are to receive. These sums together, make 13,300 *pieces of eight.* Besides which, the wreck, and other things, sold for 432 dollars. Now, each dollar may be estimated at 4*s.* 6*d.* English money, or 6*s.* 6*d.* or 6*s.* 8*d.* Jamaica currency, which may be equal to ten ryals and a half; but 12 of the dollars have been paid to the vendue master, so that there remains of them only 420. If the money were all in *pieces of eight*," said I, "it would be easily divided; however, if I give three dollars, as a part of every hundred *cobs*, it will come right, I think; so, with this understanding, I take 5145 pieces to myself, which includes 153 hard dollars." I added, "This is my share, as Governor and Commandant of the island; and as such, I cannot

refuse it; for, in fact, by taking it, I do very little more than reimburse myself for the expense I have been at in feeding the pirates and the Spanish masons, for so many months, while they were engaged in making batteries for the general security." And I added to this fair statement, that I had paid the Spanish masons, and Hart, upwards of 500 dollars in wages; and it had cost me a considerable sum of money in erecting the barracks for the artillerymen; and much still remained to be done; so that I hoped the people would see that I should put very little or perhaps none of the money into my own pocket in the end. The explanation was perfectly satisfactory. Every man now received 150 pieces each; the three Corporals, 200 each; and Sergeant Craig, 300; and Dr. Gordon, 1000.

The money being thus distributed, I said, taking from my pocket the small bag of emeralds I had found on the pirate Captain, — "Here are some emeralds: I do not know what they are worth; nor can I know, until they are sent to England; but if you will confide them to me, I will take care that you shall have their value among you, when they can be sold." They all cried out, with one voice, — "Keep them! — give them to our honoured lady." They then called for Lady Seaward; on which I sent Diego to tell her the people desired to see her. Mr. Rowley followed Diego; and soon after, my dear wife appeared, leaning on Mr. Rowley's arm; the people cheering, and making way for her to pass. In a few minutes, I took her by the hand. For a moment there was a dead silence.

Master Diego, who had followed from the mansion, now stepped forward; and, taking off his hat, spoke as follows: — "Brave and good men, I speak because I am old man. My good master, your Governor and mine, took me from canoe, with Xavier and our wives, nearly starved and perished: my kind mistress, your lady and mine, fed us and our wives; she caught the fish with her own hand that fed us: for this, I ask to be the one to give the emeralds to our lady, as a token of our love and duty." As Diego finished, the people cheered him. I then put the little bag into his hand; on which, kissing the ground, he laid it at Lady Seaward's feet, saying, — "Diego's heart is with it." My dear wife gently took the bag from the ground, when Diego laid it down; and also taking up his last sentence, she said, in an under tone — "I value your own gift, my honest and faithful Diego, not less than these jewels." She then would have addressed the people, but her voice failed: but she wrapped the little bag in her cambric hankerchief, and put it in her bosom, — "Tell them, my Edward," said she, "that I accept the jewels, and will wear them as I would do their affections — at once my pride and ornament." I repeated her words aloud: and after a little more cheering, the people retired; and my dear Eliza, leaning on my arm, walked with a slow and pensive step up to our residence.

When we sat down, she trembled, and changed colour. — "You are ill, love," I said. "I am overcome, Edward," she replied: "this is too much for me! An injury or an injustice I know how to bear;

it is my duty: but this mark of honour, this almost devotion, from the people! and then our faithful Diego, how he showed himself on the occasion! it is all too much." A tear, that natural solace of strong feeling, came to her relief, and restored her to herself: then smiling, she took the hands of Mrs. Rowley and Rosalie, who stood over her, saying, "My kind friends!"

In the evening my brother James and his wife came to see us, when I took the opportunity to speak to him about Jacob his bondman, who had been wounded in the affair with the pirates. I said it was my wish that the year and a half he had to serve should be remitted; and as I found that I had 175 pieces of eight in hand by mistake, belonging to the captors, I would give it for the man's manumission, if the men it belonged to did not object, which I was sure they would not do. — "The man is very useful to me," said my brother; "he is my right hand man; I cannot replace him; the money is no object compared to his services. I do not wish to let him go; but at any rate I will not take any money for it, if I do: and I certainly dare not refuse, if you desire it, because I had him from you as a gift on my first coming to the island." — "Then do the thing handsomely, brother," I replied, "next muster day; and what you lose by the man's services, you will gain by the people's good will and mine." — "I will do it," he said; "but now we are on the subject," continued he, "I must tell you, that I think both Van Kempen and myself not well treated as *officers* of the *Train Band;* that we did not share with others in the distribution of the

money found with the pirates." In reply to this, I showed him the Secretary of State's letter, in which it said, "*Among the persons actually engaged.*" —"If any one has a right to complain," cried I, "it is Drake, who saved the wreck from complete destruction, and may be said to have taken possession of her on the strand. But you are not wronged, brother," continued I, "you are the last man I would defraud of his right: and I hope I would not defraud any man." Here the subject rested. We now lighted a cigar, and finished the evening in talking over his success in trade, and quickly accumulating wealth, which acted on him like a cordial, so that we parted in great good humour and brotherly love.

The Thursday following being Christmas day, large preparations were made for its celebration; and I thought this a fine opportunity for James to release his bondman Jacob; who had been one of Diego's patriarchs, mentioned often in the early part of this diary. When all the settlement was gathered together, I formed the people round me in a ring, with our revered pastor, my brother, and Jacob, standing by me. I then addressed the people in these words: — "By some mistake there remained 175 pieces of eight of the pirates' money unappropriated, and also some gold pieces found in the Captain's pocket. It was my intention to propose to you that it should be paid to Mr. Seaward to purchase the remainder of the bondage of this brave man (pointing to Jacob), who was wounded in the service of the public; but Mr. Seaward will not accept of it; he stands here to give the man his

freedom, on this day, and at this place, as a reward of bravery." The people cheered. My brother then took Jacob by the hand, saying, "*You are free:* go where you please." They cheered again. — "I think, good Master Seaward," said Jacob as soon as he could be heard, "I am *free;* and now, if Master Seaward please, I will go back to Peccary Field to-night, and *free Jacob* and *bondman Jacob* will be just the same." — "I will divide the money among you," resumed I to the people. — "No! no!" was the reply from many; then, after a little pause, and some stir among them, John Reynolds, one of the settlers from Carolina, came forward, and said: "It is the people's wish that the money be made an offering to our worthy clergyman. — We desire you will accept of it, Mr. Rowley. We owe you much on our own accounts, and on behalf of our children, and we know how little you get for all you do." Mr. Rowley bowed, saying, "In the same spirit you give, so I receive. Good people, I return you my thanks for this mark of your esteem."

We now left them to their amusements; and as the Porghee and all the other vessels were in port, the sailors contributed not a little to the jollity and drollery of the scene. The flags were flying on all the heights, and at all the forts, and the vessels displayed their colours. At twelve o'clock the people sat down to a plenteous feast — turtle, mutton, pigs, and poultry; and when they were all seated, having now a good store of gunpowder, a salute of twenty-one guns was fired from Fort George; and they then set to in the true English

style of rejoicing. The day went off well and soberly; which I was glad to see, for I knew there was a great deal of wine on the island belonging to different persons. I had prohibited spirits as contraband; but as the people were becoming rich, I felt I must concede something; I therefore had allowed wine to be bought and sold: still no intemperance, even among the Germans or sailors, took place.

On the following day all the vessels were moved into Peccary Creek, for safety against the storms, which we now might expect to visit us. The muster on Saturday was dispensed with, the people being desired to remain at their homes, and secure every thing against the breaking up of the weather. It however still remained fine; the people assembling as usual to prayers on the Sabbath. At night, however, the rains began, but unattended by any thing like a hurricane, or even a gale of wind; and so they continued with little intermission for five days, pouring down in torrents.

On the evening of the 2d of January the sky brightened up; and on the next day the people throughout the island began the important operation of putting in their crops.

CHAP. VIII.

WHEN our agricultural labours were accomplished, all the vessels put to sea on a commercial errand, under convoy of Captain Drake. The Avon was now our guardship, having been painted and refitted, with two pattereras mounted on the bow, and two musquetoons abaft. I was pleased to have this clever little boat so well equipped, lying at anchor off the fort, ready for any service that might be required.

I now made a point of seeing that all the artillerymen were properly accommodated, and completed every arrangement connected with them and their department. The sergeant and men stationed at Fort Vernon were comfortably lodged, and their provision grounds put in good order. Two of the artillerymen were appointed to reside at the two-gun battery on the northern extremity of Edward's Island, which we called Pirates' Fort. A snug house had been built for them, and some ground, not far from the rock, allotted to it, and a negro, with a small canoe, directed to attend at the station. The three artillerymen that first arrived, continued to do duty at Fort St. George; and all these persons were allowed island pay, in addition to the king's. I took care that all our people, both of the Train-Band and vessels, were exercised by the artillerymen at great guns in the fort, when occasion offered; that is, the Train Band always on muster-

days; and the crews of the vessels when in port, and their ordinary duties would permit.

It may not be improper to mention in this place, that ever since John Reynolds made the speech to Mr. Rowley, in the name of the people, I regarded him with some attention; for I was much struck at the time by the propriety, if not elegance, of his manner and diction on that occasion. It now happened, that in a conversation I held with him, he confessed to me that he was the son of a squire in the West of England; that he had been wild and unmanageable from his boyhood, often running away from school, and afterwards not settling to any profession or business; that at the age of twenty-one he married a poor girl, his present wife, whose person he could not otherwise obtain; and that by this act, in addition to many others of greater delinquency, he had exposed himself to the just reproaches of his father, and to the alienation of his countenance and support. Finding himself in this merited situation, covered with shame, and pennyless, he took advantage of the government offer, to send persons free of expense to Georgia, whither he went, to bury himself from his family and his friends; but, as I already knew, he never reached that place, having sailed from Carolina to settle here. "And I am very glad," continued he, "that I did so." — "It will be your own fault, sir," said I to the poor fellow, "if you have not reason to be glad; for if you prove yourself worthy of my confidence and friendship, I will endeavour to serve you. But if I take you by the hand, do not venture to try me, as you did your father: an accumu-

lation of disobedience was even too much for him to bear; and what he could not overlook, it is not to be expected that a stranger would forgive." I then invited him to quit Allwood's Bay, where he was submissively living with another family in one house, and take up his residence in the village, where I would give him a house rent free, and recommend him to the attention of my brother and Van Kempen, who, I rather thought, would be glad to employ him as a clerk, until something better turned up for him. I then assured him I would take care he and his wife, and little child, should not starve. After this conversation, Mr. Reynolds removed to George Town; where he conducted himself well, in a short time becoming highly respected by Mr. Rowley and myself, and by every one in the islands. Nature had done a great deal for him: he was a man of quick parts, and of humane disposition, highly sensible now of every kindness shown to him.

In the advanced state of our settlement, minor matters are no longer objects for record; but, during the early part of this year, little has occurred of greater importance. It may, however, be stated, that Drake took two prizes of some value; our industry, and commerce, and wealth increased: some marriages and some births took place; and among the latter I was again an uncle. Allwood launched his schooner in May, which he called the Lady Seaward; and having discovered a number of fine cedar trees, on the western acclivity of Allwood's Ridge, I sent the sawyers there, and in July laid down a schooner of a hundred tons, on the slope of the

creek, where my dear wife and myself found shelter and safety, at the close of the memorable year 1733.

About this time I received a letter from Captain Knight, my fellow-sufferer at Porto Bello. He had arrived in England last August, in the Torrington, in company with the Diamond, Captain Knowles. My friend Frazer's *evil genius*, Knight, had paid the money to my banker, I lent him at Porto Bello; and his letter was merely to say so, besides thanking me. By the same opportunity I received also letters from my bankers, and one from Gloucestershire, with a long account of the destructive consequences of the severe and continued frost of January and February of last year; accompanied, however, by pleasing details of the great good our dear and revered Mr. Goldsmith had done, and was still doing, by the means I had afforded him; for which not only the poor, but my tenantry, were sensibly grateful. Well, notwithstanding all this, my banker's account had continued to improve; and I bless God that he never suffered my bowels of compassion to be shut up, or my hand to close, against my fellow-creatures, and still he increased my wealth: my riches multiplied, without my bestowing a thought or a care about them; but I was neither extravagant nor improvident. Our forts were built with the pirate's money, and there yet remained of it more than 2000 dollars for other purposes.

The accounts I received of the ill success of the grand expedition made against Carthagena in the spring, vexed me a good deal. I was hurt, because

of the failure of his majesty's arms; but I was sorry that the gallant Admiral had in some degree sacrificed the interests of his country, to his dislike or contempt of military men. He had evinced that contempt last year, in his reception of Captain Frazer; and he was accused of it in conducting the attack on Carthagena. However, it cannot be denied that General Wentworth wanted either zeal or knowledge; however much Vernon may be blamed, for seeing, and feeling, and acting on the conviction. But be all this as it may, I had great reason, in consequence, to be very uneasy on our own account; having received intimation that Don Blas de Leso had declared "the English should not now be allowed to hold a hawk's nest in their seas;" alluding to our settlement.

Towards the autumn, several Kingston privateers rendezvoused here; and some prizes were brought in. They petitioned me to apply for a regular Admiralty Court, that we might have power to try and condemn the prizes, but I would not do it. They were a great nuisance to the place, so that although they spent some money in it, I heartily desired never to see any of them come into the harbour. Unfortunately, I had felt myself compelled to license a house in the village to sell wine and punch; but as I had found it impossible to prevent the ingress of spirits, I put the high duty of one dollar a gallon on it, whether rum, brandy, or Hollands; while I permitted wine of every description to be landed duty free, the *ad valorem* import excepted.

I found it now no easy matter to keep that good

order we hitherto had done, especially in the village. Mr. Rowley preached, and I was vigilant; but something more was requisite. I appointed Craig town major, and ordered every one to repair to their vessels, when the drum beat off at nine o'clock. Money became so abundant towards the end of the year, that my dear wife and Mrs. Rowley, as well as myself, trembled for the consequences. I saw no remedy, but directing its expenditure into channels the least injurious; I therefore encouraged the people to dress well, to improve the appearance of their houses and furniture, and to enjoy the comforts of tea and coffee, and wine, at their own homes; all of which I effected to a certain extent, and thereby kept the greater part of the men from idling and drinking at the village. Every Saturday we held our military parade and muster, and that day was appointed also for a market at the Black Rock. Money was now the medium in all transactions, so that things were bought or sold with great facility.

But all my efforts to preserve the orderly conduct that had previously existed, were unavailing; so that at last I was compelled to tell the people, that if they did not keep apart from the privateer's men, I should be obliged either to make them do military duty continually, or to apply to Jamaica for a company of soldiers, who could not be paid without laying a heavy poll-tax on every one of them. This was a most unpleasant state of things. A profusion of money, the introduction of wine and spirits, and the presence of our profligate visiters, were the principal, if not the sole causes of all this disorder.

My dear wife, in anguish of spirit at what she saw, often said to me, "O my Edward, if we do not take great care, the fate of Port Royal must be ours!" After much perplexity and frequent counsel with those I loved and esteemed, I resolved (at hazard of proceeding illegally), to forbid any privateers entering the harbour, unless in distress. And I took the earliest opportunity of informing those in port of my determination. Accordingly, henceforward, I did not suffer one of them to come in, but warned them off, when they approached: and, if they persisted, gave them a hint from the forty-six pounder on the promontory, that I was in earnest.

By this measure, I eventually got rid of them; and in a short time after, it was my great happiness to see the people to a man, return to their industrious and sober habits. Of late I had made it a rule to visit one or more of the settlements every day, and always the village, attended by my orderly; and since the disorder in the island, I found it necessary to observe more state in my appearance. I dressed well every day, and caused all the principal persons connected with me to do the same. I wished to rule by love only, but circumstances had obliged me to make the people feel they must also stand in awe of my authority; and this could not be done without having recourse to appearances, as well as to vigilant circumspection. Prevention of crime was my object. I trembled at the idea of having recourse to punishment.

By the end of the year, perhaps some good, and I hope not much evil, had remained, as the result

of our intercourse with the privateer's men. The characters of individuals had been somewhat developed; and most happy am I to remember, that all my early friends and associates, negroes as they are, never were contaminated. We had improved in all the arrangements of social life; uses were found for money in this way, by which a salutary emulation was excited; an emulation for something beyond a hut, a garment, and a meal; and evidences of it were to be seen at every habitation within and without, and in the dress of the inhabitants.

By a strict observance of divine worship, by the blessing of God, by precept, and by example, and by strict and impartial justice, and a due vigilance, I had the satisfaction, when our Christmas came round, to see and to feel that we were again what we before had been: and I took the occasion which that sacred day afforded me, to address the people at some length. I endeavoured to show them how narrowly they had escaped destruction, and how thankful I was to Almighty God to see them again restored to his favour: and I trusted in future that no bad example, nor any other motive, should induce a single individual of them to desert the path of duty; but that they would all live orderly, industriously, and soberly; as many present had done hitherto without wavering, through all the temptations which the licentious strangers had thrown in their way. I concluded with recommending them to the protection of Almighty God, for the sake of Him, whose incarnation we were about to commemorate with thanksgivings and rejoicings. And I desired them now to enjoy themselves in all

mirth with sobriety. They did not cheer me — I was glad they did not — but a more grateful sound reached my ears — "We are sorry that any should have offended. We have no complaint to make. The Governor has done well." — "I am satisfied," I replied; "I am your friend as well as your Governor." They now cried, "Long live Sir Edward!" as I left the ground, accompanied by Drake and Mr. Rowley. My dear wife anxiously awaited my arrival at the mansion, to know the result of my address to the people. For this year had been a year of great anxiety and uneasiness to us on their account; and it was gratifying to her kind heart to hear how well they had received my admonition.

We commenced the year very well: the people were not only rich, but industrious; and the public coffers also in good case. Our produce for export was of some value, especially hats, Indian arrow-root, cigars, and stockings; besides now above twenty bags of cotton had been picked and cleaned. In the spring my schooner was launched, which I called the *Francis Drake*, in compliment to my friend. When she was rigged and fitted for sea, I sold her to Mr. Reynolds at a remunerating price; and took his bond for the amount. We had now five merchant vessels; and the genius of Van Kempen found employment for them all. Some settlers in the meanwhile had come from Jamaica; several houses were built in the village at private expense; and the whole ground became occupied, so that I found it necessary to devise a plan for

dividing the woodland regions, by which I proposed to keep about two thirds of it, next to the Silk-cotton Tree Plantation, as a park for the deer; and to cut down all the trees in the other part, to make room for extending the village.

At the suggestion of Mr. Rowley, I now raised a square shed on four pillars at each horn of Fort George, large enough to receive fifty persons in each. These sheds or open halls were pleasant places to sit down in at any time of the day, and promised to be useful for men on duty, or others, to retire to, from the scorching rays of the sun. The roofs were boarded, and painted a lead colour; the pillars green: — looking well from the lake, being not only useful but ornamental.

This was the first year of jubilee on the island; and, in consequence, some of my brother's bond-servants, but more of my own, would receive their freedom. To be prepared for this event, we made an accession of twelve male and nine female young negroes from Kingston, placing them under the same conditions of bondage with those that had preceded them. On the 9th of April, John Stone and Harry Rock, the two sailor boys, and Allan Derrick, the ship carpenter, and Priscilla his wife, and three other negro women, received their freedom in form; proclamation having been made on the spot, for any man to come forward and say *why the person whose name was now called should not be free.* In July, Abel, Noah, and David, Diego's patriarchs, had their manumission; Jacob, their fellow, having been freed by my brother before, as

has already been related. And in December, Harold and Marcus, the sawyers, with seven other men, five of whom were the artificers' apprentices, and four women also received their freedom from bondage. The law of the settlement was thus established: the act done would be referred to as a *precedent*.

CHAP. IX.

In September, the Sea Horse, Captain Limeburner, arrived from Jamaica, with despatches for me, on his way to the Spanish Main. Being afraid to approach the island, he hove to at a great distance from the promontory, and fired a gun, making the usual signal for a pilot, the Union-Jack at the fore-top-gallant-mast head. This was answered by the great gun at the flag-staff, our colours being already up. A boat was instantly despatched to pilot him in. I ordered the bugle to sound, and all the men to be put under arms. He saluted us with thirteen guns, as he approached Fort Vernon; and, as he hauled up for the anchorage at Fort George, we returned his salute from the battery. The flags were flying on Sugar-Loaf Hill, on the height above German Town, and at the three forts. Drake waited on him directly after he dropped anchor; and they came on shore together. He was received with a sergeant's guard; and the two sentinels, placed for the occasion before the mansion, presented arms to him as he put his foot on the step of the piazza. I met him there with all due courtesy.

After the moment of ceremony was over — "Here are despatches for you, sir," he said, adding, almost in the same breath, "what a thundering piece of ordnance you have got on the height above us here! we were all surprised by its report, so many leagues off. What a place this is!" con-

tinued he, with an air of great surprise. "I see nothing around me but flags and forts, and soldiers. I expected to find a miserable, blackguard hole, like the Caymanas; but this is another Gibraltar!" I smiled as he spoke, making no other reply than "I am happy to see you here, sir," and then begged permission to read the despatches he had brought me, and went aside for that purpose.

Without much preamble, they set forth grievous complaints, as made by the owners and captains of privateers; followed by a remonstrance, and something like a rap over the knuckles, for denying them rendezvous at Seaward Islands. The next matter, was relative to making a settlement at the island of Rattan, near Cape Honduras; requesting I would send Lieutenant Drake to the Mosquito Shore, to co-operate with Lieutenant Hodgson about supplies for the troops, and workmen now employed on the forts and town already in progress on that island; and to do every thing in my power to forward or succour the undertaking. This overteeming despatch, concluded by observing that, of course, I was aware of the Spaniards having taken possession of Porto Bello, and that a large naval force of the enemy was at this time collected at that port.

After reading the packet, I put it in my pocket, and desired to know how long we should have the honour of Captain Limeburner's company, hoping he would not sail very soon. "I will stay a few days," he replied, "if I may get any fresh provisions for the ship's company. I had but just dropped the anchor at Port Royal, after a long cruise, when I received orders to put to sea for the

Spanish Main, and with your despatches. All hands on board will soon be eat up with the scurvy, if I don't look sharp. Can we buy any fresh *prog* here, such as turtle and vegetables? I should like the lads to refresh a little, before we go on active service again." Instead of making him any reply, I addressed myself to Diego, who stood, full dressed, under the arch that separates the two halls. "Let a supply of turtle, and yams, and plantains, and pumpkins, and melons for one hundred and twenty men, be sent on board the frigate immediately; and to-morrow morning, at sunrise, let them have a full supply of fish; and every day while His Majesty's ship remains here let them have the same." Diego bowed profoundly and retired. Captain Limeburner stared, and, being an ugly fellow with a cast in his eye, it was difficult to guess whom he looked at. Drake was ridiculously moved, either by Master Diego's bow, or by the naval captain's astonishment; and finding it impossible to preserve his gravity, he walked away into the back hall. "You don't mean this as a present, Sir Edward!" said the captain. "I do," I replied. "I did not fish for that," he rejoined: "my crew are flush of money; let them buy what they want. I could give the purser an order to purchase, if there was need of that; but I wish to see the fellows eased of their cash; it's as bad to them as the nightmare; they are never easy till they get clear of it." In consequence of this declaration, I requested Drake to call back Diego, and countermand the order.

Mr. and Mrs. Rowley, with Mademoiselle Filibert, now made their appearance, and soon after

Lady Seaward came in; on which the stranger was introduced. He endeavoured to be very agreeable, appearing to be mightily taken with the ladies, and soon got into conversation with them; but it was all about this wonderful place. "He had made the land at the risk of his ship; he never saw a place so beset with shoals and breakers. If the directions he got from the Master Attendant at Jamaica had not been very clear, he could not have done it." — "What marks did he give you, sir?" said Drake, interrupting him. "To keep well to the eastward of the Seranillas," he replied; "and when I got into 14° 30′ north, to steer due west, and keep a good look-out ahead." — "I am happy no accident happened to you, Captain Limeburner!" said my dear wife; "for these shores are so dangerous of approach, that I should have trembled, had I known so large a vessel as yours was endeavouring last night to make her way to the land." — "As to the matter of that, madam," replied he, "we are but a *cock-boat*, where there is plenty of water; but no seaman likes your reefs and breakers, running twelve or fourteen leagues off shore; and I hope you don't laugh at me." This was an unexpected and unmerited retort to my gentle Eliza's kind and sincere assurance of the interest she took in his safety; but at once she made him this reply: — "You are accustomed to rough and brave companions, Captain Limeburner; we are not brave enough to jest with another's feelings, or to laugh when the question at issue is life or death. As I felt, so I spoke; and I am happy to see you here in safety." — "I ask your Ladyship's pardon," said

the honest tar: "I thought you might please to be witty at my expence; ladies do so sometimes. An Admiral's wife made me look very foolish, not long ago, by a joke; but I won't repeat it; none but sailors and sailors' wives are up to it." Our visiter was now again in good humour, and began to expatiate on the amazement every thing he saw here had produced in his mind. He had looked for nothing but reefs without and rocks within, — a few fishermen's huts and some negroes, — a poor miserable place; but all was truly wonderful! "Why," said he, directing one of his eyes through the open doors to the east, while the other, I think, was cast on Rosalie, "I have not seen any thing like that beautiful water-spout since I was at Hampton Court." My courteous wife thanked him for deigning to compare any thing here, with what he had seen at the palace of our gracious King; but Rosalie, never having heard a *jet d'eau* called a *water-spout* before, or for some other reason, covered her face with her handkerchief.

In about an hour the gallant Captain left us; and shortly after I prepared to return his visit, not forgetting to give immediate directions for apprising the shopkeepers at the village, and the settlers generally, that the frigate's crew would purchase from them articles of merchandise and produce. "Tell the German women, Diego," said I, "they will now find a good market for their stockings."

I went on board in state, accompanied by Drake, and was received with military honours. Although the ship had not been three hours at anchor, she was moored, the sails were furled, the yards squared,

the decks clear, and the awnings spread, the ship's company clean, and the marines dressed. There was no clamour nor noise, every thing bore testimony that a ship was Captain Limeburner's proper station in life. The officers were introduced to me one by one; I spoke to each of them, on whatever happened to strike my mind at the time. I was shown round the ship; on the appearance of which I endeavoured to pass suitable compliments; and on my return to the quarter deck, I requested the pleasure of seeing Captain Limeburner with his officers at dinner; which invitation they readily accepted.

Having thus finished my visit of ceremony to the frigate, I returned to the mansion, attended by my friend Drake. As soon as seated, I gave him my despatches to read; after which we had a long conference on the subject of the settlement making at the Island of Rattan. But the dinner hour being near at hand, he was obliged to leave me to bring Mrs. Drake from Spring Hill, before we could finish the conference.

At the appointed time our guests from the frigate arrived, and we sat down to fare as sumptuous as the island could produce. Here again was matter of astonishment, and agreeable surprise to our wondering friend.—"What! and mutton too!" cried he.—"Yes;" I replied, "and I shall have the pleasure of sending some of it alive, for you and your officers to take to sea."—The officers thanked me: Limeburner said nothing. The dinner went off very well: it could not be otherwise; the table was covered with delicacies, the cooking capital,

and the servants in attendance numerous and handy; my wines also were excellent, but our naval guests hinted that a bowl of punch would be preferred; so, accordingly, a royal bowl of lime punch was produced, having one of my elegant punch ladles, with a doubloon in the bottom, to serve it. The officers did justice to the beverage, and became very merry; but on coffee being announced, we all joined the ladies in the other hall; having made an arrangement to visit Allwood's Bay next morning, and dine with Captain Drake, at an early hour.

After my guests were gone, I sent for Town Major Craig, and gave him particular directions as to the guard, the sentinels, the wine-house in the village, and every other matter that I thought required vigilance during the stay of the frigate; my policy being always to guard against mischief.

The next morning early, Lady Seaward, and Mr. and Mrs. Rowley, with Mademoiselle Filibert, (Fidele, who had now grown both fat and lazy, being left behind, to keep the little girls company,) went to Spring Hill in the barge, and breakfasted with my sister. Drake was up before the sun, and on board the Porghee, getting her ready for sea; but he returned to the château with Captain Limeburner, and three of his officers and a young midshipman, about noon. The whole party instantly set forward to see the fort, and explore the corkscrew road to the summit of the hill. We proceeded directly through the first gate; the road winding from thence to the westward, our backs being turned on the fort. — "I should like to see

the fort first," said Captain Limeburner. "We are going there now, sir," replied Drake. "A rum way to get to a place," cried the Captain—"to make sail from it." I smiled, and we kept on our course, following the gradual ascent of the road, from east to west, from west to north, from north to east; at which point we found ourselves at the drawbridge. "Well, this is capital!" exclaimed our companion, as we passed over into the fort. The artillery-men were all at their post; and he showed great pleasure in examining the guns, and in talking to the men about the weight of metal, and some other points. "This fort is well placed," he observed, "for giving a raking fire to any ship coming in from the southward." I told him to whom I was indebted for the plan. We now left the fort, and proceeded to ascend the hill in the same direction. On coming round, so as to be over the gate by which we entered, we came to the grotto that had given Drake the first motive for making a winding path up this ascent. Much pains had been taken since its first discovery, to adorn it. Coralines and sea fans, and large beautiful shells, were placed around in great profusion; but all so disposed, as not to produce an idea of confusion or superabundance. Having admired this enchanting cavern a while, we continued our route; for although we were ascending, yet so gradual was the slope (being only an elevation of one foot in twenty), that an acclivity was scarcely perceptible. The effects this spiral road gave to the eye of the spectator, with respect to the surrounding scenery, were truly astonishing: at every step something was seen and

something lost sight of; and although we came round and round again and again, upon every object that is in view of the hill, yet by constantly varying the ascent we varied the aspect of the prospect. At length we arrived on the platform, from whence the *coup-d'œil* was truly delightful; but the large gun riveted the attention of our companion. "I suppose," said he, "it is the fellow to this you have got on the other height." I told him it was. "And the Spaniards," exclaimed he, "allowed Porto Bello to be taken, with guns such as these to defend it! the lubbers! — With this gun, in this place, Sir Edward," continued he, "you should beat the devil out of the bay, if he were to come in." Saying this, he put his hand in his pocket, and gave the serjeant of artillery a dollar, to drink the King's health. We then retraced our steps; and having, of course, to wind back in an opposite direction, the scenery became so changed, in the succession of objects to the eye, that it scarcely appeared the same landscape.

We had just time to put off our coats to cool, so as to dress for dinner after the fashion of old Commodore Gunman, when dinner was announced. Drake gave us a complete course of fish and shellfish, followed by a boiled turkey and a fine Dutch ham, a roast kid, a raised pie, and a brace of Mrs. Allwood's gallenos. After dinner he showed what the island could produce for a dessert: pine-apples, melons, shaddocks, oranges, and bananas, all surrounding a royal bowl of punch, made with our own limes, were placed on the table. Some odd things were said at dinner by our nautical visiters,

which made our ladies smile; but I will only repeat one of them. When the roast kid was brought on table entire, and with his head erect, a young midshipman present mistook it for a dog; and the moment it was set down, and he gave it a glance, he cried out, — "Bow wow!" — "O no," said Rosalie, who sat next him; "*c'est un chevreau.*" — "He *is* a queer *shaver*, sure enough," replied the boy; "but you must not gull me with an outlandish name; may be you called him Pompey."

After dinner the conversation turned on the uniform worn by the navy. "I have heard," said I, "that his present Majesty, having determined on giving a uniform to the navy, was led to make choice of that you wear, from seeing a blue riding dress, with white lappelles, on an elegant and beautiful lady of high rank, at a hunting party." — "*That's Betty Martin!*" replied Captain Limeburner. "Who?" I rejoined. "Oh, *it's all my eye*, that," he exclaimed: "nothing but a cram for land lubbers." After pausing a moment, and looking a good deal vexed, one eye resting on me, the other directed to the harbour, he resumed: — "Why, our uniform was worn by *Admiral Noah;* aye, and before his time: *Old Ocean* himself wore it time out of mind. You have noticed *his blue jacket*, I suppose, and have seen *his white lappelles*, when he puts on *his full-dress uniform:* and he always wears that, d'ye see, in a gale of wind." — "Thank you, noble Captain," I replied; "I shall not forget to note that down, as a brave attempt to reflect honour on the coat you wear." Before nine o'clock we all left the château, having previously

invited our naval friends to visit us on the morrow, it being muster-day.

On returning to our own home, my Eliza asked me what Captain Limeburner could mean by saying "*That's Betty Martin.*" I told her, in reply, I was as much at a loss to know his meaning, as she could be, at the time he spoke it; but I now recollected having heard the expression at school, where it was a common joke with the Latin scholars. Its origin I believed to be in a Romish prayer to *Saint Martin*, which begins, — "*O mihi! Beate Martini!*" and as far as that goes, may literally be translated, — "O to me, blessed Martin;" but which jocosely may be read, — "*Oh, my eye, Betty Martin!*" and this I believe to be the origin of Limeburner's exclamation.

On the following day there was a grand market at the village. Boat-loads of sailors came on shore from the frigate, and bought largely; chiefly stockings and hats, and plait for hats; also some shopkeepers' goods; no small quantity of tobacco and vegetables; and having taken a great liking to Gortz's sausages, he supplied them abundantly. Captain Limeburner landed his marines a little before noon. Our train band then fell in; and we mustered nearly one hundred rank and file, exclusive of the strangers. The marines beat us in exercise; but our men beat them hollow in firing at the target. Captain Limeburner was very angry at this, threatening to flog the marines if they did not do better. "Don't blame the men, sir," said Craig, respectfully, who stood by us: "give them practice, and they will fire well; — no man can do

any thing well, that he does not do often." The naval captain, with one eye still fixed on the marines, cast a piercing glance on poor Craig with the other, saying in reply, "Who the d—l are you, to prevent me flogging my marines, if I like it?" On which Craig again respectfully put his hand to his hat, and walked away to the left.

After the business of the day was over, we all dined on board the frigate. The dinner was rude, but hearty. There was some excellent peas-soup; a great pilau of three boiled fowls, stuck full of cloves, and smothered in a pile of rice; a double piece of ship's pork; a calipee of turtle, baked in the oven; a baked plum-pudding; and a dish of pancakes, half a foot high. A horn-blower stood under the half deck, just before the cabin door, playing on his instrument all the time we were at dinner. His notes were most incongruous, and some of his blasts almost ridiculous; but our unsophisticated host often praised the music, declaring "he was the best horn in the fleet." In the course of conversation, Captain Limeburner proposed sailing the next day; saying, "the fellows had now plenty of *fresh grub*, and he must see what the *Dons* were about *on the main*." I, however, succeeded in persuading him to remain till Monday, and attend on divine service to-morrow with his officers and crew. "Man does not live by bread alone," observed Mr. Rowley, opportunely, "but by every word that proceedeth from the mouth of God." —"I approve of that," replied Captain Limeburner: "although a sailor, I hope I am not quite a *Turk*, — though they say I am *a bit of a Tartar*."

This remark drew a smile from his officers; the allusion seemed not to be lost on them; and it could not but bring to my mind his reply to honest Craig — "*Who the devil are you, to prevent me flogging my marines, if I like it?*"

On Sunday we were much crowded, even under the canopy of the great tree; but it was a most gracious sight to my dear wife and myself — so large a congregation: namely, our now numerous people, and all the frigate's crew, assembled to worship on the very same spot where, in time past, she and I alone, with our dear little dog at our feet, lay waiting patiently on that gracious God, who had not only answered our prayers in mercy to ourselves, when we alone were the inhabitants of the island, but who had now almost miraculously raised in this spot a consecrated temple to himself, and brought to it even a multitude of grateful worshippers. "I am like Jacob," said I, "who had crossed Jordan with his scrip and staff only; and, behold, he returned over it at the head of *two bands!*" A celestial tear stood in my sweet wife's eye, when I said this to her; and I thought Rachel, the beloved of the patriarch, must have looked like her.

Early on Monday morning, half a dozen sheep, a few turtle, some poultry, and a large supply of vegetables, were sent on board the frigate with my compliments. The boat brought back the thanks of Captain Limeburner and his officers, with a present of two casks of vinegar, — an article we much wanted. The Porghee was getting in readiness to sail out of the harbour with the frigate, while Drake was

at the mansion receiving his instructions how to proceed as to the business to be done at the Mosquito shore with respect to the settlement making at the Island of Rattan. After finishing what I had to say to him relative to his public duty, I desired him to procure three stonemasons; as I saw clearly that the village must be extended, and a church built for the accommodation of our increasing population. As soon as the sea breeze set in, the two vessels weighed, and stood out to sea.

During Drake's absence, about one third of the woodland region was cut down for the site of the new buildings; a street being marked out in a continuous line from that already built, but intersected at right angles by a broader street, opposite to the anchorage, and running back nearly to the face of the hill. At this upper extremity it was intended to place the church: and at the crossing of the streets, in the square of their intersection, a fountain was to be made by means of a leaden pipe leading from the spring at its source. Drake brought the masons on his return, and gave a flaming account of what was doing at Rattan. There were engineers, and a battalion of King's troops, and plenty of government money, but they were in want of almost every necessary. Van Kempen pricked up his ears at this information, and lost no time in sending off two vessels with supplies; some part of which was our own island produce, and manufacture, even to brown pans and dishes, made by the Germans, which now they had learned to glaze, by throwing salt into the kiln before they took out the ware. The masons, and bricklayer,

and carpenters, and a suitable number of labourers, were quickly set to work upon the church; a plain building, with a turret for only one bell.

By one of our vessels from Jamaica in October, I received a gracious letter from my friend Lord Harrington, in which he told me the King had raised Sir Robert Walpole to the peerage; and had given himself also a step or two in the same way. But he added, whatever situation he might fill, he hoped I would ever count on his services on all occasions. I read the letter after dinner to my domestic friends; and then laying it down for a moment, observed that "Lady Seaward would have been burned for a witch seven years ago."— "How so, Edward?" she exclaimed. "On a memorable occasion, my love," said I, "you predicted that the King would either dismiss Sir Robert Walpole with a fool's cap or a coronet."— "May the Lord now guide him!" she replied. "I forgive him; but his country and posterity, I fear, will not. *History* seeks justice, without mercy." At this remark Mr. Rowley shrugged up his shoulders; and while I folded up the letter, and put it in my pocket, I proposed the health of my noble friend by his new titles of Viscount Petersham Earl of Harrington. Here this short conversation ended, soon turning to the ever-interesting subject of our own settlement.

CHAP. X.

On Tuesday, the 7th of December, early in the morning the *look-out* at the flag-staff on the promontory reported several large ships in sight, but could not make out what they were: he hoisted our colours, and then came down. I immediately sent for Drake, but lost not a moment myself in hastening to the height, to reconnoitre them. In about half an hour I made two of them out to be large frigates, and three others armed brigs: they were then becalmed. I was observing them attentively with the glass, when Drake arrived; and at that instant I saw an English ensign blow out from the mizen peak of one of them, the first of the sea breeze having just reached her. "O, they are English," said I, giving Drake the glass. He had scarcely put it to his eye, when he exclaimed, "*All Spanish!* Sir Edward."—"Not so!" I replied; "are you sure of that?" He took another look at them. "The sooner we are at quarters," he cried, "the better; they are all Spanish men-of-war." Van Kempen had joined us just as Drake spoke. "Let them fire the *big gon* then," he said. I desired that the gun should *not* be fired without my orders; and instantly proceeded to descend, taking Drake and Van Kempen along with me. "They certainly meditate an attack on us," said Drake, as we turned away from the flag-

staff. "And it is my business," I replied, "to give them a warm reception."—"Allow me, then," he rejoined, "to go out with the Porghee, and reconnoitre." I made him no reply; but stopping for a moment, called Price, the fifer, and bade him run down before us, and say I desired the bugle to be sounded *to assemble;* and then return to the signal-post, to bring messages from thence to the mansion. I then addressed Drake: "I shall lose no time in making my dispositions; but I do not think I will allow you to stir from the harbour."

After this, not a word was spoken during our return. A thousand things to be done, and which *should have been already done*, crowded into my mind. I had but just time to give them any thing like an arrangement, before I sat down in my own hall. In a minute I was on my legs again, strong in a feeling of collectedness for the occasion,—"Captain Drake," said I, "let the Porghee be towed round, and moored athwart the mouth of the cove, under the precipice on the east side of the isthmus, ready to slip, if necessary. Let the merchant vessels be immediately run close up into Peccary Creek. The Avon, and boats, to be kept ready for any service that may be required." He went to put the orders into execution, not making any remonstrance or reply, beyond saying, "It shall be done."—"Mr. Van Kempen, I charge you to get some water-tight casks up to the promontory, and employ people, and asses, to carry up water to fill them; and convey provisions to the same place in sufficient quantity, lest we should be driven to make a stand there, with all our women, and their

children." He began to talk. "Take example from Captain Drake," I said, hastily, "and do you, as you are desired!"—"I will make the women carry," he replied. "Do so, if you please," I bawled out, with some vehemence; "only let it be done, and that speedily. Craig," said I, lowering my voice as I spoke to him, who at the time was standing very near to me, "I believe we shall have to fight; see that every thing is ready for the small-arm men; sixty rounds in their cartouch boxes, with a spare flint. And take care to deposit kegs of ball cartridges in such places as you think may be safe and right, in case of being hard pressed by the enemy, should he land. I intend thirty of our men to be detached to Sugarloaf Hill, besides twenty sailors to the battery. Send appointments there for that number, with three kegs of ball cartridges, and some spare flints: and have the accoutrements for all the rest arranged under the sheds at Fort George. But there is so much to do, the men cannot be allowed to fall in till the last moment."

By this time the people had collected; among whom was the serjeant of artillery from Fort Vernon, and one of the artillery-men from Pirates' Fort. But we had been guilty of great negligence: there were no cartridges filled for the Spanish guns. The artillery-men at hand were immediately sent to the magazine; from whence ten barrels of gunpowder, and a bale of paper and woollen cartridges, and some slow match, were taken, and conveyed to Fort Vernon. And I was glad to get this am-

munition over, even unfilled; for I expected every moment, now the sea breeze was freshening, to see Price come down from the height with the intelligence that the Spanish squadron was crowding sail for the port; but as yet he did not make his appearance. Two barrels of gunpowder and cartridges were quickly sent to Pirates' Fort, by the canoe that brought the artillery-man, at the blowing of the bugle; and the same quantity was now got up to the promontory; also a supply of filled cartridges brought to Fort George. Every boat was in requisition, every body was employed.

My brother and the Doctor waited for orders. I took my brother aside. "James," said I, "go home immediately, and let your wife and children be removed to German Town, with all your money. And remember, in case of an attack, it is my wish that they, and all the German women, take refuge on the height where the flag-staff is. But when they are there, take care that no person hoists the colours; for by so doing, the place of their refuge would be shown. Meanwhile order the women to take water and provisions to the height; and you return to me as soon as you can."—"I don't like this business, brother," he replied; "but at any rate I think it right to place the women in safety; and I will see to it immediately."—"Doctor Gordon," said I, "let your wife accompany Mrs. Seaward to the height above German Town, to be out of the way. I fear there will be work to-day for you."—"In that case," he replied, "I can't spare my wife; she must come to the hospital." But his

wife thought otherwise, and went off with the rest of the women on that side of the settlement to the height above German Town.

Ten o'clock had arrived without any decided report from the flag-staff. I sent up orderly Corporal M'Nabb, to try his sagacity; he returned, saying, "that all the vessels were laying to, except one of the brigs, which he supposed was seeking to find the channel; but she was looking for it off the Turtle Islands." Drake now rejoined me; having stationed the Porghee across the cove, our haven of safety not to be forgotten. Having done this, he had only to walk across the isthmus, and come through the village and woodland region, to reach the mansion. I told him my arrangements in a few words, and desired him now to go with all speed to Spring Hill for Mrs. Drake and the dear children, and to send all the women and children from Allwood's Bay to take refuge "on your head, my dear friend!" said I, "on *Drake's Head:* you know we must now call every body and every thing by their proper names." I spoke this with relaxed features; for I wished that he should feel, as I had been a little austere in the line of duty, that we were nevertheless the same dear and familiar friends. "They will be safe enough at Spring Hill, Sir Edward," he replied. "They may not, sir," was my answer, rather sternly; "if the Spaniards do attack us in right earnest, they will put out all their strength against Fort Vernon, and the hill that commands it. Let me see your family here, directly." Drake smiled, and bowed, and went off; and within an hour returned with his precious

charge, in my barge; and all the other women and children from Allwood's Bay, in the Avon.

Our people were every one in motion; like ants, whose hill had been suddenly invaded by the rude kick of some country clown, or wicked schoolboy. Some were going, some were coming, some laden, some empty. The Avon was now despatched to Fort Vernon, with a detachment of twenty seamen, (the merchant vessels being all safe in Peccary Creek,) to reinforce the artillery corps stationed there. And thirty of the train band were sent to defend Sugarloaf Hill. At the same time a boat was sent to Pirates' Fort, with six sailors, carrying along with them provisions and small arms for themselves, and for the artillery-men and negro boatman that belonged to the fort. This boat brought over all the women from the settlement at Pirates' Land; their husbands, our late emancipated negroes, having already come to us on the sounding of the bugle. I deputed Corporal Andrews and Lance-Corporal Finlayson to go with the detachments to Spring Hill; and offered my brother the command. But he said he did not think himself equal to it; and thought I should give it to Captain Drake. "I cannot spare him," I replied. Then instantly taking hold of a piece of paper, I wrote a commission for Craig, styling him Lieutenant James Craig, and appointing him to the command of Edward's Island, and of all the forts thereon, *pro tempore;* also commanding every person to obey him in all things, &c. "Here, Craig," said I, "go and take the command of Fort Vernon, and defend Sugarloaf Hill to the last. Here is

your commission." — "I thank your Honour," he replied; "I hope I shall do my duty." He then added, "Have you any further orders?" — "Go to your post," I replied, "and see that there is a supply of water, and provisions at the fort. Also be careful of the boats and canoes; keep them snug behind the rock, under the fort, for communicating with me, or for any other service that may be required." Craig took his leave; and as on his arrival at Sugarloaf Hill the dispositions would be completed, my anxiety for our safety now became much lessened. For if the enemy had pushed in with the first of the sea breeze, Fort Vernon, and every other place after it, must have fallen in half an hour: we were not prepared, and, to my shame I confess it, from sheer negligence. How many places and ships have fallen an easy prey to an enterprising enemy, from the same cause, though, perhaps, for ever concealed from the public eye or ear!

"I cannot spare *you*, Drake," said I, addressing myself to him, as Craig left the hall; "all your own seamen are with us. I have sent none but the crews of our merchant vessels, to assist the artillery-men at Fort Vernon and Pirates' Fort. You must take charge of Fort George here, with the Porghee's crew: you will then be ready to embark in the Avon, or go round to your own vessel; either of which you can do in twenty minutes; or act here, as circumstances may require." One of my old artillery-men remained on the promontory: the other two were in attendance at Fort George.

While all this was going forward, my dear Eliza

walked to and fro with much earnestness, but great composure; evidently engaged in giving directions to people without, at the back of the mansion. She never spoke to me from the moment I left her to go to the promontory early in the morning, till about ten o'clock, when she brought me a cup of coffee with her own hand. I then sat down; and as she gave it to me, she kissed my forehead, saying, "They may strike at the *Dolphin* to-day, but they shall not kill him. *Mon Dieu et mon Roi*, dear Edward, is your motto, and your defence." I looked up, and blessed her. She continued to walk to and fro without speaking, but catching every word I said; and doing her part, in the spirit of the instructions she heard me giving to the heads of different departments.

It was twelve o'clock. I sent Drake to the promontory to observe the enemy. Every man and every woman continued actively at work, accomplishing various arrangements. So I now sat quietly, for a few minutes, reconsidering all I had done, and contemplating what remained to do. At this moment Doctor Gordon came in, asking Miss Rosalie to give him some silk thread, and a bit of wax, which she did. He then very coolly sat down at the table opposite to me, and proceeded to double and wax the silk; and having done this, he took some curved needles from his pocket, and began threading them. Mr. Rowley, who stood by, enquired what he was about. "*Just getting ready a few ligatures for amputations*," he replied. "What!" exclaimed our kind but faint-hearted minister, evidently not under the impression of

ignorance, but of horror. — "A few ligatures, I tell you, sir; just to be in readiness you see," answered the Doctor. My dear wife, who was passing while this dialogue took place, said, very quietly — "Doctor Gordon, I think you might have spared us the anticipation of having our legs and arms cut off, by the exhibition of those *ligatures*, as you call them, on that table." — "They are nothing but a little waxed thread, madam," he replied; "they can do nobody any harm." But he was not insensible of the rebuke he had received; for he wrapped up his ligatures, with their needles, in a piece of paper, and walked away, no doubt to the village, to put his hospital in order. For he was a conscientious man, though often getting into scrapes through what he considered "acting in strict conformity to his duty."

Drake soon returned from the promontory, saying, that two of the brigs were now off the Turtle Islands; and, he thought, with the intention of landing troops, and making a diversion. For they appeared full of men, and had several boats towing astern. The two frigates, he said, continued to lay to in the fair way between the reefs, with the channel open: the other brig being a little within them, but out of shot. "I think, Sir Edward," added he, "now that you have finished your dispositions, the height is your proper station; from whence you can see every thing, and send people down with orders, from time to time, as you judge necessary. And, if I may be allowed to give an opinion, I think the Porghee and Avon should run up within the reef, to prevent a landing by boats at Eastfield.

The brigs cannot get in; the Turtle Islands are reef-bound, except for boats or small craft, so there is nothing to fear from the large vessels."— "But if you beat up with the Porghee," I replied, "it will show there is deep water between the reef and the land; which may be a hint to them to work in with the large vessels behind the promontory, and destroy you, and attack us from the isthmus, with their whole force by land." — "They cannot work in, Sir Edward," he replied; "the wind is right ahead, where there is any, and so baffling withal between the promontory and great rock off the cove, that any square-rigged vessel would certainly miss stays, and fall out again to leeward." — "Very well, then," I said, "take your old crew, Martin, Purdy, and the four others; and also the ten pirates, if you think them trustworthy; you once said they were fine fellows; and with these people, man the Avon. She has patteraras and musquetoons already mounted: send her round immediately, and have muskets and cutlasses ready for the men, when they get to the cove, where the Porghee lays. By the time they arrive you will be under sail; and be sure to take your own boats with you, lest you should be becalmed and want them. This matter being settled, Drake manned the Avon as I had proposed, and marched off with all his own men across the isthmus, to his vessel: thus taking with him on his expedition forty-six men.

It was now nearly two o'clock. All the carrying that remained to be done, could easily be effected by the negro women; therefore the train

band fell in on the open ground. We mustered sixty-eight rank and file, after having sent off the detachment to Fort Vernon. From this body I picked out thirty-eight best calculated to work the great guns at Fort George, and placed them under the direction of the artillery-men. My brother was now ordered to march the remaining thirty, round by the woodland region, and take post within the stoccado of the cave storehouses, with the two field-pieces in his front, ready to act as might be required.

Mr. and Mrs. Rowley, with Mrs. Drake and their children, and Rosalie, and poor old Rota, had been sent forward to the height. My dear Eliza alone remained with me, if I may except faithful Master Diego and Fidele. Nothing more was left to do here, but to return God thanks, that these Spaniards did not pounce upon us, and destroy us at once, as they might have done. I helped my guardian angel on her mule; I then mounted the other; and taking our way to the fort, I encouraged the men as we passed along, telling them my post was at the height to observe the enemy; but if my presence should be required with them, or at any other point, I would soon be down. They gave me three cheers; and I then proceeded as fast as the mule would carry me, accompanied by my beloved wife, and our early and much loved friends and companions, honest Diego and faithful Fidele. "God will not forsake you, my honoured and dear husband, in this day of trial," said my dear Eliza as we passed on; "I am proud," continued she, "to see you so collected and assured; it delighted my heart all this morning

to hear you give your orders." — "Thank you, my sweet comforter," I replied; but I said no more, for my mind was full of our present portentous situation.

Just as we came to the brow of the summit, I heard a gun, the first that had been fired to day. I hasted to alight. It was from one of the Spanish frigates, without shot; that vessel hoisting at the same time a Union Jack at the main-top-gallant-mast-head, — our signal for a pilot. They, perhaps, had just determined on the stratagem, but it was hoisted at the wrong mast-head; and, therefore, if any thing were wanting to confirm Drake's opinion, we now had it. No notice was taken of this signal. The frigates were now standing in; I kept my eye on them with the glass, desiring the artillery-man, as soon as they came within shot, to make the fifer sound the bugle three times, (a signal I had agreed on with the officers below, for the serious approach of the enemy,) and then to give him a shot from time to time as opportunity might serve, but not to fire without good aim. Saying this, I mounted the mule again; and with Eliza by my side, and Diego at our heels, rode a little way to get sight of the Porghee and Avon, which I soon perceived stretching up between the isthmus and the reef. There were signals flying at the mast-heads of the two brigs, and boats full of men trying to get in round the reef close to the Turtle Islands, just at the place where we were shipwrecked nine years ago. From the spot where I halted, I could see all the Spanish squadron, but I was most intent on the operations to the northward. The two frigates and brig had

again hove to, with main-top sails to the mast, distant about three miles east of the promontory, just clear of the southernmost point of the inner reefs. But it appeared to me that they knew their way in, and that they were only waiting the landing to be effected, and the consequent junction of the other two brigs.

In a little time I perceived the boats with the troops, endeavouring to get back to the brigs, on seeing the approach of our vessels. But some of them were too far advanced, to succeed against the surf. The Porghee soon got her bow guns to bear upon three of the boats, and in five minutes after, both she and the Avon with her patteraras and musquetoons were firing briskly. The Spanish boats returned the fire with musketry, but their shot could not reach our vessels. One of the boats was quickly sunk. The brigs now hoisted their proper colours and fired; but their shot fell short. Something at this moment decided the Spanish Commodore. He hoisted the Spanish flag, and hauled down the English colours, before flying as a *ruse de guerre;* filled his main-topsail; and stood in for the harbour, with the other frigate and brig in his wake. When I saw this, I hasted to the flag-staff. By the time I got there, the Spanish squadron was within long range of our gun. The bugle then sounded three times, and in about a minute after, the artillery-man gave the enemy a shot. It was well hove and strong, passing over their mast-heads. "Less powder and better aim next time, Robins," I cried, addressing myself to the artillery-man. He made no reply.

but loaded again as fast as he could. I turned round the while with my glass. And it was a gracious, though awful sight to me, to look down upon the forts and see all our men at quarters, and the artillery-men with lighted matches, ready to give the invaders a warm reception. Robins fired again, and, by good fortune almost unprecedented, struck the head of the foremast of the second frigate. Down came her top, with all above it, and all her head-sails. In an instant she came athwart the brig that was in her wake, and they lay foul of each other. Soon, however, the brig disentangled herself, the Commodore heaving to, the while. Robins tried to hit him, but could not succeed. The disabled frigate now drifted with the wind and current, round the bluff of Edward's Island, (which placed her out of the way of our gun,) and she there, as we afterwards learnt, let go an anchor.

The Commodore, notwithstanding this accident to his other frigate, entered the passage to the harbour in the most undaunted manner, supported only by the one brig. As yet he had nothing to fire at. Guns from the sea could not be elevated sufficiently to reach the promontory. But as soon as he got fairly within the passage, between the two islands, he and the brig commenced firing away from both sides, at any thing and every thing that presented itself. In a few minutes Fort Vernon opened upon him, when distant about three quarters of a mile; and soon after, the guns from Fort George were brought to bear upon him. He now had to encounter the fire of both batteries. He

did not close with either fort, but lay to, midway between them; firing both sides at long range, one at the one fort, the other side at the other. I thought he saw his error, but he did not seem to like to close with Fort Vernon: and Fort George being to windward of him, he could not reach it without making a tack; which was not very convenient in his present situation, being already a good deal cut up in his sails and rigging: however, I thought he intended to do so, for he soon hauled close to the wind, laying up for the Cocoa-nut Grove on the isthmus; still keeping up an irregular fire, but much slackened. I saw great confusion on his decks, whenever the smoke cleared away; but our fire continued steady; from which I augured well for the safety of our people. After being thus engaged about an hour, the brig stood away for the northern channel, the frigate following her; both a good deal damaged. As they came abreast of Pirates' Fort, the frigate received the contents of the two guns there, which the artillery-men very wisely had reserved. A trifling fire was returned, but they seemed not in a condition to keep it up; or perhaps, only intent on making their way out by the northern passage, they gave up the idea of more fighting. There certainly was some one on board who knew the island well; however, before they could get fairly out, the raking fire of the two guns followed them with sufficient execution to knock away a topmast from the frigate, and add otherwise materially to the damage they already had sustained.

I thought it was now all over; but I soon per-

ceived that Sugarloaf Hill was attacked from the land side. It immediately occurred to me that the force came from the frigate, which had dropped anchor at the back of Edward's Island. The great gun on the platform was directing its fire to one point on Allwood's range, from whence I could see, by help of my glass, the Spaniards descending. "This is the consequence of cutting down the cedar trees on the other side of the range," thought I to myself; "at which time a footpath must have been made over it, that I am not aware of." I confess I was amazed and disconcerted. I called Price, and wrote an order in pencil for Captain Seaward to draw off a guard of seamen from Fort George, for the stoccado; and send off his thirty men of the train band, to Fort Vernon, without delay, in such boats as were at hand; and to direct them to take off their hats on landing upon Allwood's beach, and carry up as many large pebble stones in them as possible to the fort, and order the gunners to use them as grape-shot against the assailants.

In ten minutes after Price was gone, Drake made his appearance at the flag-staff, covered with sweat and gunpowder. I had just time before his arrival to move from my position, and make a sweep with the glass, of the reef and Turtle Islands, when I saw the two Spanish brigs still there, but one of them on her beam ends, and the other at anchor outside of her, sending boats to and fro. I thanked God for this; but was uneasy, because I could not discover either of our vessels, and had just returned when Drake mounted the rising ground. "We have destroyed three of their boats, Sir Edward,"

said my gallant friend, "and have taken fifteen prisoners. One of the brigs is on her beam ends, and the other at anchor outside of her, trying to get her off or save the crew. But where is the rest of the squadron?" continued he. "Our brave fellows," I replied, "have beat the Commodore, and one brig, out of the bay. But there is a frigate, whose foremast Robins shot away at the second fire, now at anchor on the other side of the opposite bluff; and I suspect she has landed a great part of her crew; for they are at this moment attacking Sugarloaf Hill from the land side. Take the glass, and you will see the business." — "I thought there was something the matter there, by the occasional cannonading," he observed, as he put the glass to his eye. "They appear to be in force on the range at this moment," he said, as he held the glass up to its object. "What is to be done, sir?" — "I have ordered them a reinforcement," I replied. "If they take Sugarloaf Hill," he exclaimed, "the place is lost! Allow me to run down on the frigate with my own crew, and all the sailor-men I can collect below from the fort and from the Avon; perhaps I may surprise the frigate, with most of her crew on shore, and capture her." — "The emergency of the case, my dear Drake," I replied, "induces me to accept your gallant but daring enterprise. Go; and God be with you!"

In forty minutes after he left me, I saw the Porghee, with her decks full of men, passing the promontory from the cove, into which he had run after destroying the brig's boats. I again turned my eyes anxiously to Sugarloaf Hill. Two of Fort Vernon's guns

had now been brought to bear on the assailants; but there was a brisk fire of musketry on both sides. Our boats with the reinforcement were landing, and as yet there was no enemy near enough the beach to dispute the way to the entrance gate of the cork-screw road. I was glad to see all the empty boats coming back, in tow of my barge — including those which had been left in the boat harbour under the fort; and I began to hope the important post was safe; there being now ninety men there, — nearly double the number Frazer allowed me to defend it against a thousand. Robins thought he might help to frighten the Spaniards on the ridge, if he could do nothing else: he was sure he could reach the spot, where he saw a considerable body collected; and who, he said, no doubt, were making a platform to mount guns on. This suggestion I thought very probable: I therefore desired him to try a shot, though the distance was perhaps rather more than two miles. There was great difficulty in getting the gun round; but by the help of the negro women on the height, who were numerous and accustomed to labour, we effected it. Then giving it the greatest elevation, to ascertain its power, he threw a shot clear over the range. The angle was lessened until he struck the place just below where the Spaniards were at work; and he continued to fire every now and then, whenever a number collected together on the spot. I was surprised that the gun on Sugar-loaf Hill had not already beat them from this position; but I learned afterwards, that the party we saw, were not seen from the other post, there being a screen of trees between them. The fire of our

gun rather disconcerted them; at least we thought so, for they soon disappeared: but it was from a different cause. Drake had laid the frigate aboard, cleared her decks, and made the Captain his prisoner. The frigate's boats, and almost all the crew, were on shore; but the instant the attack was discovered, the Spaniards that were in sight, or within hearing from the beach, crowded down to their boats, to go off to the assistance of their Captain and comrades. But the thing was done; and Drake knew too well what he was about, to allow any consideration under heaven to induce him to risk his object, viz. the preservation of Sugarloaf Hill, and consequently of the settlement. He therefore, after striking the frigate's colours, cut her cable, and allowed her to drift, taking with him the colours and the Captain on board the Porghee. Having thus disencumbered himself, he kept under sail, firing into the boats as they approached him, or endeavoured to gain the frigate. Drake had seventy men on board the Porghee; therefore had little fear of being boarded by the boats, the whole of which did not contain more than his number. There were five boats, of which he sunk two, one cried for quarter and had it, one made its way alongside of the frigate, the other returned to the shore. The frigate was drifting fast upon the reef; and as Drake knew a boat's crew could not prevent her doing so, he left her for the present to her fate, and proceeded to cannonade the boat and people returned to the beach, who were now joined by several others from the ridge. For a while they replied to his fire with musketry; but laid down

their arms when they saw their Captain a prisoner, who was made to stand up in the rigging for that purpose.

A midshipman was now sent on shore from the Porghee, who received the arms of the Spaniards into his boat; then making the prisoners, to the number of forty, get into the Spanish long-boat (which was the boat that returned to the shore), he took her in tow, and rowing off, received a rope from the schooner. Drake now very wisely proceeded on his return, with the two boats in tow; leaving the frigate to her fate. Before I knew what had taken place at the back of Edward's Island, I perceived the fire of the assailants slacken, and ultimately cease; which was immediately followed up by a flag of truce, displayed on Allwood's ridge. It was an officer's shirt, tied by the sleeves to a pole. On seeing this, I sent Price, as fast as he could run, to the further extremity of the promontory, to call down to Captain Seaward, (who was posted below, within the cave avenue stoccado with fourteen seamen, the remnant of our force here,) to man my barge, and also the Avon, and despatch them immediately to Fort Vernon. This result of the contest was most grateful to my feelings; for my anxiety had been more than I chose to express.

The sun was going down, as my gallant friend, with his prisoners in tow, appeared round the opposite headland; and I now thought I might with safety allow the people to descend. I gave my beloved Eliza my arm, our hearts being lifted up to God for this wonderful deliverance from a powerful enemy; and we left the height, followed by Master

Diego (leading the two mules), and by all our household. Our first enquiry to the artillery-men on our return, was for the wounded. There were none as yet reported. No one at Fort George had been touched; but some of the Spaniards taken in the boats by Drake in the morning, were in hospital with Doctor Gordon; where good dear Mr. Rowley was now rendering every assistance in his power, notwithstanding his timidity and natural horror even of the idea of wounds and bloodshed. The mansion, however, and all the outhouses, and the sheds at the horns of the fort, were marked, and in some places much damaged, by the shot that passed over the curtain of the battery.

I was scarcely seated, when Drake came on shore with a sailor close at his heels, carrying a huge bundle on his back. As the hero advanced to the mansion, his wife ran out to embrace him; he clasped her in his arms tenderly, and then coming up to me by a sort of leap, exclaimed — "We have done it, Sir Edward! I have nabbed the Captain of the frigate, Don Pugnacio, — no, Ignacio, something, de Herrera: he'll tell you his name by and bye: he is our prisoner; there is his sword, and there are his colours;" turning his eye upon the honest tar, who bore them on his shoulders. "Heave them down, Jack!" said he; "and I hope she lies broadside on the reef by this time." Then resuming his discourse to me — "As soon as we cleared her decks of the some fifty or sixty men that opposed us, I cut her cable and sent her adrift." — "You should have preserved the vessel, if you could, my dear Drake,"

I replied; "she would have made you a full Captain." — "That crossed my mind, Sir Edward, when I ordered her to be cut adrift; but I would not risk a chance of miscarrying in the service I was sent upon, for that or any other consideration. If I had attempted to keep possession of the frigate, I might have failed in what I have accomplished, and perhaps been taken myself." — "You have done well, my gallant friend," was my reply; "I honour you not only for your bravery, but for the nobleness of mind you have displayed on the occasion." My dear wife at this moment stretched out her hand to him, saying — "Shake hands with me, my excellent friend. How happy is my Edward in being so nobly supported!"

In the midst of these greetings, the serjeant of artillery arrived from Lieutenant Craig with a convention of capitulation, signed with El Teniente de Fregata, Don Juan Quesada; by which seventy-eight men had laid down their arms, on condition that they might be allowed to return to Spain, or Spanish America, — "and not serve again until exchanged," was very properly added by Craig. The arms were taken into the fort; the prisoners placed in two of the houses at Allwood's Bay; while a third was allotted to the wounded, who were fast bringing in, two Spanish surgeons being in attendance; sentinels were planted, and a guard placed in an adjoining house. The serjeant of artillery, moreover, informed me, our reinforcement had arrived but just in time; for that two guns had been got up nearly to the top of the ridge by the Spaniards; that many of the prisoners

were regular soldiers or marines; and that, as far as he could learn, the number of killed and wounded must at least equal that of the prisoners. "Indeed, we soon saw," continued he, "the Spanish surgeons have their hands full." But God had been merciful to us; there was not a man of ours killed at Fort Vernon, nor on the hill, and only three slightly wounded by musketry. "The Spanish vessels," he said, "fired so badly, that not even the fort was hit, but several shot had struck the houses in the bay." I now countersigned the convention; then taking the artillery serjeant aside, I whispered in his ear the parole and countersign for the night, desiring him to communicate them privately to the commanding officer at Edward's Island. Having done this, I put the ratified paper into his hands, desiring him to give it to Lieutenant Craig, with my thanks not only to himself, but to the men under his command for their steady defence of the post entrusted to them. I then desired that our wounded might be sent over immediately; and as there was no longer occasion for so large a force at Edward's Island, I requested that fifty of the train band might return to me in the Avon. "You may tell Don Juan Quesada," said Drake to the serjeant of artillery, as he was about to depart, "that I have got his friend, Captain Don Ignacio, snug enough." — "I am glad to hear that, sir," replied the serjeant; "he was likely to give us some trouble." — "But here is his Donship's sword, Sir Edward," said Drake, stooping and taking it up from among the colours where the sailor had thrown them: "I

should have presented it to you in form, when I first came in, but some how it slipped my memory at the moment." I received it from his hand with a feeling of some exultation, but it was that I might return it to him again. — "Let him that won it wear it, my brave fellow," I exclaimed; "you are worthy not only of his sword, but his frigate."

As soon as the detachment arrived from the other side, the prisoners were landed from the Spanish ship's long-boat, and marched up with a guard to the stoccadoed recess; where the other prisoners already were, with no other sentinels than my brother, Van Kempen, and two artillery-men. But the Spanish Captain was detained on board the Porghee, for the present, by my order; as I did not wish him to see the hurly-burly condition into which he and his comrades in arms had thrown us.

It was now thought right, although it was no longer daylight, to reconnoitre not only the frigate, but the brigs. Honest Diego, who stood by me, and who never had been five yards from me all day, volunteered to go with his men in the barge to carry Captain Drake round to the back of Edward's Island, to ease the white sailors a little, who had had no rest since morning. Diego's proposal was immediately accepted; and he was told to send Martin or Purdy here, or both if he could find them. While Diego was gone to get his crew together, poor Drake took some refreshment, the first he had put within his lips this day; yet he found time to speak between his mouthfuls. — "I told you those pirates were fine fellows, Sir Ed-

ward," said he; "my eye! how they laid about them when we boarded the frigate. I popt upon him round the headland, and was athwart his starboard bow before he saw us. I don't know how many of his crew my fellows drove overboard; however, the decks were soon cleared one way or other; but three of the pirates were killed, and two of my own brave men also; and I have ordered seven more of them who are wounded to be sent on shore to the hospital." As he said this, he took a glass of wine somewhat hastily, jumping up at the same time from his chair, and wiping his eye with the back of his hand, to brush away a tear that had sprung forth in spite of him. — "But they only did their duty," said he, "to die for their country." He then sat down again, saying, "I am done," and pushed aside his plate. I endeavoured, and we all endeavoured, to conceal our emotions, but some vainly: the feeling he had evinced was too powerful not to carry along with it the sympathy of all present. — "Come, my dear fellow," said I, striving to put aside what I felt, "let us fill another glass of wine, and drink the King's health, and the health of all his brave men-at-arms." As we filled our wine, Diego returned with Martin and Purdy, telling Captain Drake that the barge was ready. — "Go you," said I, addressing myself to the two Bermudians, "in a canoe to the Turtle Islands, and bring me word what the two Spanish brigs are about. Look narrowly at the one on the reef, but have a care that you are not taken." — "Can't catch canoe, sir," replied Purdy, laughing, and looking, per-

haps, something like Master Diego's black cat. Drake caught a little of Purdy's happy humour, his native spirits returned, and he laughed too. I desired him to give each of the men a glass of grog, which he did, and they all walked down to the beach together.

There was no sleep for many of us this night. I sent for my brother, gave him the parole and countersign, and disposed of the guard. I then sent for Van Kempen, and requested him to victual the prisoners, and keep an account of the issues. The women were engaged in bringing back things from the promontory, and neither man, woman, nor child were idle; all happy to be so employed. Between two and three o'clock in the morning, Drake returned from visiting the frigate. He found her aground on the inner edge of the reef. Diego hailed her in Spanish, and spoke to the men on board, before he carried Captain Drake along-side. He told them, all their companions, as well as captain, were prisoners, and that he would advise them to surrender quietly on the same terms as the others had done; but if they refused, every man would be put to the sword. An officer answered from the deck of the frigate, "I surrender on the terms granted to our companions, now your prisoners." The barge was instantly rowed up to the side of the frigate, and no time lost in getting the remainder of the crew and the wounded men (who had fought with the boarding party) into her, and into the Spanish boat that had made good their ship after that rencounter. There were eleven wounded men, and only twenty-two others,

a great part of these latter having belonged to the boat that reached the frigate after her capture; so that almost the whole body that had defended her when the Captain was taken were either killed or driven over-board in the contest. The two boats being thus crammed full of men, pulled away as well as they could round the bluff, and made for Allwood's Bay, where the prisoners were delivered to the guard, and the wounded to the Spanish surgeons. While they were conveying the wounded to the house appropriated for them, Drake took a walk by the bright star-light up, to his own house to see how matters stood there, and found things in a sorry plight; for the enemy had taken post in his château, when attacking Sugar Loaf Hill: the house, in consequence, was much damaged by our own shot; and, besides, the Spaniards had made free with whatever came in their way.

Not one of our family had as yet retired from the hall to take rest, when Drake returned. His recital was listened to by every one with interest; but my poor dear sister could not hear, without vexation, the account he gave of the condition in which he found their residence. She, however, quickly consoled herself and him, by saying, "Well, I should be thankful to God, that I and the children were not there; and that the Almighty has preserved you, through the perils of this awful day."

We now endeavoured to persuade the ladies to go to bed, but they desired to be permitted to remain. "It is a beautiful night," said Mrs. Rowley, "so calm and cool; and I like to hear the sentinels calling out 'All's Well!' which is so delightful a

sound, after the toil and peril of this anxious day." She had scarcely done speaking, when Purdy entered abruptly, out of breath, and all in flutter. I could only make out "Spanish officer, sir! Guard, sir!" Drake jumped up, and ran to the door;—"A file of men are marching some one up," he exclaimed; and presently Martin and a Spanish naval lieutenant made their appearance. The ladies now withdrew—Martin and Purdy fell back towards the door, where the guard stood while the officer entered. I rose to receive him. He said, "He had been sent by his Captain, Don Blasco del Camino, to enquire into the truth of the information he had received from our canoe, that one of the Spanish frigates was captured by us, and that the Commodore had made a retreat. Don Blasco wished to know this, to order his conduct accordingly; and he trusted I would receive his officer, as if he came with a flag of truce." I partly understood him; but I made Diego interpret, for fear of mistake. I then replied through the same medium, desiring Master Diego to tell him, "That what he heard was true." And to ask him, whether his captain entertained any hope of getting the brig off the reef. He replied, "he did not."—"Well then," said I, "would his vessel receive from us 157 Spanish prisoners, besides forty-five wounded?" He stared at this question, which Diego repeated twice. "Valame Dios!" he exclaimed, "is this possible?" Drake had left Captain Ignacios's sword upon the table, and the Spanish colours were lying on the floor. Diego, pointing to them, said "Mira Senor Capitan!" On which he raised his

hands, and seemed much affected, stepping aside, evidently to avoid treading on the Spanish flag. I liked him for this, and desired him to be seated; at the same time ordering some wine and refreshment. While he took it, I enquired of him how he got into the canoe. He said, "They saw it from the brig approach the wreck; and made a man who spoke English call to it, and say they wanted to send a letter to the Governor of the island; and if the canoe would wait and take the letter, no harm should happen to them." The people in it replied, "Then send only two men in the boat, and we will wait."—"Well done, my old shipmates!" exclaimed Drake. After this account, I put my question to him again, about receiving the wounded men and prisoners. He said, "It was impossible, his vessel being already too full, having all the people that belonged to the other brig on board, excepting what had been sunk in the boats, and taken in the affair of the morning."—"Well, then, sir," I replied, "go back to your ship, and tell your Captain, Don Blasco del Camino, to make sail as soon as possible, with all the men he has on board, and land them either at Santa Caterina or Saint Andreas, and return with a flag of truce flying; he shall then have his countrymen, our prisoners; but it must be understood that he abandons the brig on the reef to me. If he agrees to this, let us see the white flag at your mast head early to-morrow morning, which I shall acknowledge by hoisting a white flag also. I would send you back, sir," continued I, "in a large boat; but nothing larger than a canoe could take you with

safety through the reefs." He wished to see Capitan Don Ignacio Pasqual de Herera. I told him "that was inadmissible: Don Ignacio was my prisoner, and could have no voice in the business." Here ended the conference. I then gave directions that Martin and Purdy should return him to his ship; adding my expectation, that they would act with the same caution in delivering him, as they had done in receiving him.

As the Spaniard stood up to withdraw, he said, with much feeling, "I believe there is a young officer, a son of Don Blasco del Camino, among the prisoners taken this morning; it would be gracious in your Excellency to give me the pleasure of taking him back with me to his father." — "Certainly," I replied, "you are a fine fellow; you have won my respect." When Diego interpreted this, the Spaniard, with the warm manner of his climate, bent forward and kissed my hand. Tired as my dear friend Drake was, he would not lose the opportunity of participating in this gracious act, as the Spanish lieutenant very properly had designated it; so he walked down with him, escorted by the corporal's guard, to the place where we had deposited our prisoners, and brought the lad forth and delivered him to his friend. Their meeting was affecting and impassioned: the youth was overjoyed at his unexpected freedom, and the immediate prospect of being restored to his father.

At daylight in the morning, just as the réveillez beat, a large table-cloth was sent off to the promontory, to be bent on to the signal-halliards, in place of the ensign. At sunrise we fired our gun.

The Spanish brig then hoisted the flag of truce; and the moment it was perceived, ours went up also. As soon as the breeze reached her, she was seen under all sail, steering to the southward. Drake had thrown himself on the Spanish colours, soon after his return from delivering the youth to the lieutenant, and I was happy in seeing the poor fellow sleeping soundly. But he awoke at daylight, just as the drum beat, and dear old Rota brought in some coffee for our refreshment, of which he gladly partook; saying, "Now I am fresh as a lark — what's the order of the day, Sir Edward?" —"No rest for the wicked, Drake!" I replied jocosely; "I place every sailor-man in the settlement, excepting Diego and his crew, under your command. See if it be possible to get off the frigate."

Rota had called Mrs. Drake, and my dear wife, agreeable to their request. They came out in their dishabille, and joined us at our early breakfast. Very soon after their appearance, my brother came in. He was anxious to return to Peccary Field, and my dear Eliza and myself were equally anxious that he should do so, as it was probable Mrs. Seaward had not as yet descended from the heights. While James was refreshing himself with tea and coffee, I arranged with Drake that he should go on board the Porghee immediately, taking Diego as interpreter, and inform the Spanish captain that in the course of half an hour a boat would be sent to remove him to the country house of a gentleman on the island, where he was to remain while a prisoner with every indulgence, except going beyond its immediate grounds. I also desired Drake

to say, that whatever private property he had on board the frigate, should be got at and conveyed to him. Drake now left us, to apprise Don Ignacio Pasqual de Herera of all this, and then to set about the more arduous task I had imposed on him. By the time my brother had quite finished breakfast, Diego returned from his first commission to the Porghee, and I now ordered him to see that his men were clean, and properly equipped to attend Captain Seaward back to her.

As soon as Master Diego left us, to get the crew of his boat ready, I told my brother my reasons for desiring him to take the Spanish captain to his house. "He could not remain on board the Porghee, while Drake was employed in recovering the frigate—I had no room for him at the mansion —there were plenty of spare rooms at Peccary Field House—besides, it was prudent to take him at some distance from the fortifications, and the prisoners, neither of which I wished him to see familiarly." James had made no objection when I first mentioned it; but I thought it right to show him my motive for sending this man to his house. My brother seemed satisfied; but said, he hoped I would allow three or four of his servants to quit military duty at the stoccado, and return to the house before him; for now there was not a man at Peccary Field; and if the women were not yet come from the heights, by the time he got home with the Spanish captain, there would be nobody there at all, and every thing, of course, in disorder. "You shall have the men," said I; "send four of them off from the Black Rock in a canoe imme-

diately; they will arrive at Peccary Field before you embark in the barge." He now left the mansion, and the ladies retired again to their rooms, my dear wife taking me by the arm, and leading me to her bed-side, where she made me sit down. "Let me help you off with your coat, my Edward," she said, "and lay yourself down to take some rest, and your Eliza shall watch you as you sleep." I kissed the kind hand that helped me off with my coat, and laid me down on the mattress, wearied enough, in honest truth. She threw a sheet over me, and I soon fell asleep.

In about two hours I opened my eyes, met by the blissful smile of my guardian angel, who had sat by me all the time, watching every respiration, and enjoying the sight of her much loved husband sleeping safely, sweetly, and soundly, as she turned over in her mind the terrors and anxieties of the preceding day. I arose, and took a bath, by which I was much refreshed. Every thing was again in place in the house; a regular though late breakfast was now laid, and all the female servants were in attendance.

Dr. Gordon came up, accompanied by Mr. Rowley, and gave us rather a satisfactory account of our wounded men. On the Doctor's return to the hospital, my dear wife sent a woman with him, carrying a bundle of old linen, and some tea and sugar, with a few other comforts, for the sick, which he had requested. Diego came back from landing my brother, and the Spanish captain, at Peccary Field; and he was now despatched to Allwood's

Bay, at the suggestion of my kind Eliza, with a similar present of old linen, and some wine, for the wounded Spaniards, with directions to enquire of their surgeons what else they were in need of. He took over some of Mrs. Drake's women, but she chose to remain with us for the present.

A little before noon the Avon came from the frigate, with a note from Drake to me, in which he said, "I send you seventy-three barrels of gunpowder; this will replenish our magazine; it is quite dry. I don't think she leaks; but I know you will say I have done well to secure the powder. I have laid out an anchor ready to heave on, as soon as we have lightened her enough. Ask Van Kempen to send me his galliot by return of the Avon, the one can tow the other." — "Well done, Drake!" thought I to myself; "but what am I to do with the powder? the avenue to the magazine is full of prisoners." The moment the gunpowder was landed, the Avon stood over to Peccary Creek, and returned, in tow of the galliot, on her way to rejoin Drake.

I mentioned to my Eliza the dilemma in which the arrival of the gunpowder placed me. — "March the prisoners to the cocoa-nut grove," said she; "it will be a recreation to them, and they will be out of the way." — "That will do," I replied; and I forthwith sent my orderly to direct that all the prisoners within the stoccado should be marched under a sergeant's guard to the cocoa-nut grove for the day, their dinner to be sent round in a canoe; and they were to be allowed to eat of the cocoa-nuts, and otherwise amuse themselves, but not to

break the trees. This was done; the powder the while being placed in the magazine, and the avenue cleaned out, and some fresh sand thrown into it, all before the party returned.

Van Kempen came to me, after sending rations to the prisoners, and some supplies to Fort Vernon. He said he was sorry to inform me that no mullet had been taken the preceding night, and that the fish-pots were not sufficiently numerous to collect any quantity of other fish worth naming. The fact was, the mullet had gradually forsaken the Black Rock, and now they were gone entirely. I wished it had been the rats he was speaking of. I told him I would order more fish-pots, to be made immediately; and for the present he must serve turtle and hog's flesh, chocolate-nuts, and Indian-corn flour, to the prisoners; and that I intended, without loss of time, to bring all those now at Allwood's Bay over to the isthmus, and place them with the rest, within the stoccado. Diego and his men were now sent to Peccary Creek for the Jack Martin, which I despatched to Allwood's Bay, with a note to Lieutenant Craig, desiring him to send all the prisoners, excepting the officers and wounded men, over to the isthmus,; also to return himself with our people, leaving the settlers belonging to the bay, with their arms, now to take care of themselves, and to place the Fort and Hill again in charge of the sergeant of artillery, and his men; leaving orders to plant an artillery sentinel at the door of the house where the Spanish officers were, and to keep a good look out. About five o'clock Craig arrived with his detachment, and ninety-nine

prisoners, who were marched up to the stoccado just as the others were coming back from the cocoa-nut grove. The whole number being now mustered, amounted to one hundred and fifty-four; not many less than our whole population put together, including the sailors belonging to the Porghee and other vessels. But extraordinary as it may seem, it is a fact, that the enemy lost more than this number in killed, drowned, and wounded. I think when we were attacked, our force was thirteen artillery men; train band ninety-eight; Porghee's crew; King's sailors thirty; crews of the merchant vessels, including the ten pirates, forty-five, exclusive of officers; — total, one hundred and eighty-six.

When Craig had disposed of his prisoners, he waited on me. We talked over a little the trying business of yesterday, and I then desired him to put half the train band on duty, day and day about, until we got rid of the Spaniards. Then, after thanking him for his gallant conduct, I told him he should retain his commission as lieutenant, with the addition of that of adjutant of the island force, also remain town major; and that I hoped I should be able to raise his pay equal to his new rank. He expressed his gratitude, and went away to perform the duties of his office.

A little after sunset I received a note from Drake, written in pencil, to say, "he could not return to-night; that he meant to work, watch and watch, in lightening the frigate, and that he hoped to heave her off the reef in the morning; that he understood there was a Panama pearl-diver among the prisoners, his name Vicente Guecco; that he wished I would

find him out and send him to the Porghee, as they could see the frigate's cable and anchor, where it had been cut away, lying in about five fathoms water; that he had in vain endeavoured to lay hold of it by grapnel, but he knew the pearl-diver could pass the bight of a rope round the end of the cable in an instant, and recover it." In consequence I sent Diego to the stoccado, who soon found the man. He stipulated for a small reward, and a permanent asylum with us; to which I agreed most willingly, and then sent him to Drake. He did the business adroitly on the following morning, and received a piece of gold.

On Thursday forenoon the Avon arrived, with various matters from the frigate, bringing the satisfactory information of her being afloat, and that she did not leak; the Captain's trunks, or rather boxes, with some other things belonging to him and the officers, were among the things brought in the Avon, and immediately forwarded to their respective owners by Diego, who was desired to enquire whether any other articles of value belonging to them yet remained to be looked for. The galliot soon followed the Avon, pretty well filled with stores and provisions. The frigate being thus lightened, and all the water started, she was easily hove off. This being accomplished, the boats towed her to the spot where she lay at the time her cable was cut; the end of which, now recovered by the diver, was brought into the hause hole, and the anchor weighed. That done, Drake had only to wait for some additional boats to tow round the prize into the bay, which the opportune arrival of

my barge and two others supplied. With these, and his own best boat, he took the proud Spaniard in tow, and a little before sunset brought him to an anchor off the woodland region.

" L'Invariado," her name, appeared half as big again as the Sea Horse. She mounted thirty large guns, and at the time of the attack had on board three hundred men. Drake put his senior midshipman on board, with half his crew, ordering them to unbend the sails, and make a speedy and careful clearance of the wreck forward; so that every thing might be ready to have the damage repaired as soon as possible. We felt a temptation to hoist the English colours over the Spanish flag; but my gallant friend and I had but one paramount feeling on that occasion; which was, not to add to the chagrin of the Captain and other prisoners, by displaying the ensign of our triumph before them.

On the morrow Drake went to look at the brig, lying on the Turtle Islands' reef; but it was his opinion that nothing could be done with her but break her up; so we determined to leave the wreck as it was, until after we should get rid of our prisoners.

Every thing being now pretty well to rights, excepting the damage done by the shot, I was no longer ashamed of our condition; so I thought in courtesy to invite Don Ignacio Pasqual de Herera to dine with me; and accordingly I fixed on the following day, Saturday, — giving Adjutant Craig orders to see the whole body of men well dressed and appointed.

The Spanish captain came agreeable to the in-

vitation, and also two of his officers from the other side, whom I had invited to meet him. Although he had no side-arms, and therefore was not entitled to a guard, I ordered him to be received with military honours, and showed him much courtesy at the mansion. I was glad to find he could speak French. He was, however, grave and reserved: his officers were more inclined to talk; but as they knew nothing beyond Spanish, little conversation could be kept up with them. We had an elegant dinner, and all our family were present, including the only hero that belongs to it, gallant Drake.

After dinner the conversation turned on Porto Bello. Don Ignacio now became a little more communicative. He had heard how Don Francisco Martinez de Retez had behaved to the English Captain Knight and to myself; desiring me to believe him when he assured me, that Spanish officers generally, and he among the number, blamed the Governor very much for his conduct. "But," said he, "that hidalgo is now tasting the sweets of a prison himself; having been disgraced, and sent to a dungeon, on his arrival in old Spain, after surrendering the place to Vernon." My dear wife now asked him how the Spaniards came to give the name of Porto Bello to that horrible place. "It means Bel Havre — does it not?" said Lady Seaward. "Oui, Madame," he replied, "as you English speak it and write it; but we Spaniards call it Porto Velo, — that is, 'Havre Caché,' the Veiled Port." I was rather pleased to learn this from the mouth of a Spaniard, and therefore have noted it

down in my journal. The Spanish captain showed both good breeding and proper feeling during his visit, in never making any allusion to the events that had occurred here; and we were equally punctilious in avoiding the painful subject. He however spoke of the attack on Carthagena, by Vernon and Wentworth, saying "It was madness to have attempted it;" and he thought they had acted wisely in abandoning Porto Velo and the Spanish main altogether; and he added his belief, that by this time they had abandoned their design on Cuba also. Coffee and cigars were served soon after dinner, and at an early hour my Spanish guests took leave, and returned to their respective quarters.

On the following day, which was the Sabbath, I made a point of having as full an attendance at divine service as the nature of our present circumstances would admit. Our heavenly-minded pastor on this occasion returned thanks to Almighty God, in an appropriate prayer, for our great deliverance from a powerful enemy.

On Monday the Spanish brig of war made her re-appearance, with a white flag flying at the fore; on which I sent out a boat to pilot her into our harbour, — first taking the precaution to man the batteries, and place the train band under arms. An English ensign was hoisted on board the frigate; but I did not make a vain-glorious display of the Spanish colours under it. The prisoners and wounded were now embarked as quickly as possible, for whom I took a receipt, under the joint signatures of the two Spanish captains, by which

they engaged that the persons named therein should not serve against England during the present war, until exchanged. The brig being ready to put to sea, I ordered them a supply of fruit and vegetables; and we thus parted as good friends as persons could well do who were national enemies.

CHAP. XI.

THE final departure of the Spaniards was a matter of general congratulation; for although the events incident to their invasion furnished matter for proud exultation, yet they had left us something more to do than sit down in idleness, and fight the battles over again. On the very day the brig sailed out of the harbour, I made arrangements for the morrow. The people were then set to work, to repair in various ways, and at different places, the damages sustained by shot during the encounter with the enemy. We had plenty of hands and plenty of wood, and no lack of money. Drake had been the greatest sufferer, at his château; but he made light of it, saying — "I can plaster it over with some of their own dollars." The masons and other workmen now proceeded with the church, and Drake used all diligence to repair the damaged foremast of the frigate, hiring Derrick and Xavier to assist his own carpenter. I employed a large party of men with boats, to save what they could from the Spanish brig, still lying broadside on the reef. I hired them at regular wages, to be paid out of the proceeds, which were to be sold when the business was completed, for the benefit of the island treasury. The wreck, I believe, was my right, if I chose to make it so; but the frigate was Drake's prize; and perhaps, according to the law of the case, none but they who boarded her and took her could claim to

share for the capture, as she was not taken under any battery, nor within sight of any. But Drake was already rich in money, and always so in spirit; he therefore wished the prize to go among the garrison generally; and handsomely furnished an argument against his own exclusive claim, by saying "it was a shot from the promontory that disabled her; and he would therefore tell his crew that he thought every one should share." The result was, that the brave seamen made no demur; and the people were told, at the first muster-day, of the liberal conduct of Captain Drake and his men, respecting the prize. The train band gave the gallant tars three cheers; and this cordial generosity was not without its happy consequences.

The month of December was too far advanced before the frigate could be got ready, to be safe for Drake to proceed with her to Jamaica: besides, he could not do it without borrowing all the merchant sailors of the colony; and my brother and Mr. Reynolds were anxious to despatch their two vessels to Kingston with Spanish goods. The Cedar schooner, which was built here, sailed remarkably fast; but the Tom Cod was a sort of dray-horse. I therefore begged of my brother not to send his vessel at present, but to allow the schooner to go alone, in which I meant to forward my despatches to the Governor and to the Admiral at Jamaica. "The schooner need not wait for my vessel," he replied; "they can each make the best of their way."— "O, very well, brother," I rejoined, "let it be so; but when two are together, one may escape should an enemy's vessel see them: if the Tom Cod

be espied alone, she is gone for a certainty."— "I will take my chance," he said; so accordingly the vessels sailed.

My despatches detailed the action we had sustained, in which I gave great praise to all our people, but more especially to Drake and the seamen, and to Craig; requesting promotion for Drake; and praying that the Governor would send me thirty regulars; and if a lieutenancy could be purchased for Mr. James Craig, who was now lieutenant and adjutant of the island force, I would pay for it, provided he might command the detachment; and I would give 25*l.* over the usual price to the lieutenant who might be in command of the men, to resign in favour of Mr. Craig. I fully expected all I requested would be granted; and making sure in my own mind that there were officers always desirous of quitting the West Indies for England, I should have no difficulty in purchasing a commission for Craig, and, by the proposed measure, obtain for him the command of the detachment.

When the stormy season approached, all the vessels in port were laid up in safety within Peccary Creek, and Drake contrived to get the frigate in there also, mooring her head and stern to the shore and to the rock. We kept our Christmas as usual. The year finished without seeing either of our vessels return from Jamaica; and although the sky sometimes lowered, we were as yet without any visitation from the storm.

1743. — On Sunday, the 2d of January, a storm of a different kind, and to us more terrible, threat-

ened the settlement with immediate destruction. At noon several large ships were descried, not only from the promontory to the southward and westward, but also from the heights above German Town, to the northward of the island. As soon as the alarm was given, we were on the alert; Drake betaking himself to the promontory, and one of his officers to the German Town height; signals being agreed on. I issued some orders, and joined Drake with all possible speed. By the time I got up to the flag-staff, he had clearly made out three Spanish men-of-war of two decks, two frigates, and two brigs. There were others in the distance, no doubt with troops, we could not make out distinctly; but we saw enough, — and for a moment my heart sunk within me. I turned to Drake. "We will do our duty, Sir Edward," said my gallant friend, "and must leave the event to God." I turned to God. "We are in thy hand," I exclaimed, raising my whole soul to the throne of mercy; "Thou only now canst save us." My courage seeming to come again with this appeal, I hastened to return to the mansion, with a stout heart and collected mind, prepared to do my duty.

But He, in whose hands are life and death, cut the matter short. Before I could reach the mansion, the sky was darkened, the lightning glared, and the thunder pealed. Instead of cannon, the hurricane blew all round the compass; and I blessed God in the storm. Full of joy, buffeted, and wet, we entered my dwelling. Here my beloved wife, and our revered Pastor, and all our friends, met us in awful expectation. As I entered the hall amidst

the rain and the whirlwind, I lifted up my hands, saying — "Our God has delivered us!"

We now had to barricade ourselves against the blessed tempest, leaving the enemy in the hands of Him who can break them as a reed, and scatter them like chaff. The storm raged, and the torrents poured down upon the earth and sea, with little intermission for three days: on Thursday, the sky became clear at intervals, and the winds lulled. Wrecks were then discovered from the heights in several directions; but no sail was to be seen on the face of the waters. When this report was brought to me, dear Mr. Rowley stood up, and exclaimed — "We may now indeed say with Queen Elizabeth, on a like memorable occasion, '*Afflavit Deus, et dissipantur!*'"

The next day was appointed as a solemn fast to the Lord; which I hope was not only observed, but deeply felt by all his people, whom He had just delivered from an overwhelming force; which, according to human calculation, had it attacked us, must have extirpated the whole colony.

Our boats and canoes were sent out as soon as the weather would permit. Seven wrecks were soon discovered among the reefs and shoals that surround the islands; among which were two of the largest ships, but every soul had perished; spars, and casks, and dead bodies, continually floating ashore.

This was an awful event; but the contemplation of our own imminent peril from them, kept down every strong feeling of pity for those that had perished: and I ventured to entertain a further

consolation, that the fate of this expedition, which I now had no doubt had sailed promptly from Porto Bello, to revenge the cause of the former, would prevent any further attempt at our destruction. For the seasons there, are no guides as to the seasons here; generally speaking, they have bad weather on the main, from July to October, which is our fine season. Then, with occasional deviations, the weather becomes fine, when the islands suffer from hurricanes, not felt on the main land; and this is one reason among others, why the cacao or chocolate tree (a very weakly plant) thrives and bears so much better on the main, than in any of the islands. It is true, Vernon got a dusting at this season, off Carthagena; but I understand such weather seldom occurs at this time of the year, any where along the coast.

To prevent our agricultural pursuits from being neglected at this important season, I was under the necessity of issuing an order as to the number of persons each day that could be permitted to despoil the wrecks; desiring them to arrange among themselves who were to go, and who were to remain; and as to dividing the proceeds obtained: and I was happy enough thus to secure the interest of the settlement, without exciting murmurs among the people; not at present an easy task, for they were daily obtaining articles of considerable value from the Spanish ships. But all that floated on shore of itself, became my property in right of my grant; which my servants collected from time to time, and either brought home, or piled up in appropriate places. I believe the wrecks also, as they lay upon

the reefs, were droits to me; but I rather chose to waive the question, and give them up to the people, insisting only on the drift that came ashore.

About the middle of the month, the Francis Drake returned from Jamaica. This vessel had been detained by the bad weather, which set in there before Christmas-day; and we were sorry to learn that the Tom Cod had not reached Kingston when she sailed. The schooner brought letters in answer to my despatches; in which some compliments were paid to us on our gallant defence, and a sort of promise made, that Lieutenant Drake should have promotion on the arrival of the frigate. But no soldiers could be sent; General Wentworth having taken all the disposable troops with him. Neither could any thing be done at Jamaica, relative to getting a commission for Craig in the King's service.—"Well! well!" I said, when I read these letters, "it matters not. Our God has been our deliverer! I will confide our destinies to him; and I feel assured the Spaniards will never try their fortune here again." Mr. Rowley and my dear wife both applauded my feeling, and the resolution I had expressed on the occasion; and I can honestly say I suffered no disappointment from the tenor of my letters from the authorities in Jamaica, except in my failure with respect to Craig.

In consequence of the wrecking business still going on, Drake was not able to navigate the prize to Jamaica till late in February; and then he could only manage it, by a condition of taking a great load of merchandise in her belonging to our merchants; all of whose sailors were, on those terms,

lent to him. The frigate having been put in seaworthy condition, Drake presented me with her long-boat and pinnace; and on the 26th of February sailed with her for Jamaica, under convoy of the Porghee.

He arrived in about ten days at Port Royal, without any accident. The naval officers there had been long looking out for this Spanish frigate, as an object for promotion. Drake says they crowded round the Porghee in their boats, as he came in with his prize, casting an eye on the large Spanish ensign as it blew out under a St. George's Jack; and as he passed under the stern of the ship that had *the guard* that day, the Captain hailed him, — "What do you mean, sir, by hoisting a St. George's flag on board the prize?" — "They are our island colours, sir," he replied. When he told me this, I wished to have witnessed a sight so honourable to my most esteemed friend and to myself. The circumstances under which the frigate had been captured, were well known; and therefore his answer as to the St. George's Jack was understood and received. But when he went on board the flag-ship to report his arrival officially, he was under the necessity of explaining the manner in which he had been able to man the prize; and that in consequence he must be permitted to move her up to Kingston, to discharge the cargo belonging to the merchants, who had on that condition lent their men to navigate her. On the following day the prize was ordered to proceed to Kingston to put out the cargo; and when this was done, the frigate was moved down to Greenwich. After some days a survey took place.

She was valued at 16,000*l.*, and purchased for his Majesty's service; her name not only being changed, but reversed; being now called the "The Inconstant." Prophetic, no doubt; for she was wrecked soon after on the the Grand Caymans.

Drake received 14,000*l.* in treasury bills, on behalf of the captors; the head-money being yet forthcoming; 2000*l.* of the purchase-money having been deducted as the eighth alleged to be the right of the Commander in Chief at Jamaica. This would have been a small matter to complain of; but my gallant friend was juggled out of the promotion he so well had earned, and therefore so justly claimed. "Sir Chaloner Ogle was sorry he was obliged to give it to certain officers sent out from England by the Admiralty; but he would recommend Lieutenant Drake to Lord Winchelsea, the first Lord of the Admiralty, for a sloop of war at some future period."

I was much vexed by the treatment our brave defender met with at Jamaica; but it gave me some consolation to perceive that he did not take it deeply to heart. When speaking on this subject, he made this reflection:—"If I had got the promotion I desired, I must have been removed from Seaward Islands, which contain every thing dear to me on earth. Besides," added he, "I have made an ample fortune by prize money: so by and by, perhaps, we may all go to Old England together; where I I will hoist my pendant on the chimney top of some good house, with you for my neighbours, and dear Maria for my first lieutenant."

My brother and Van Kempen purchased 8000*l.* worth of the government bills, which enabled me

to distribute four eighths of the prize money immediately: viz. three eighths among the seamen and privates of the train band, which gave 159½ dollars to each man; one eighth among eight non-commissioned and petty officers and twelve artillerymen; the former having a double share, 600 dollars each, the latter 300 dollars each. The remaining 6000*l.* in bills, was just equal to pay the other three eighths; but we could not convert them into dollars: one-eighth among Lieutenant Craig, and Van Kempen, Doctor Gordon, and the Chaplain, Mr. Rowley, gave them each an interest of 500*l.* or 2100 dollars each, in the bills; and one eighth between Captain Seaward and Lieutenant Drake — the latter sharing as a land captain — 1000*l.*, or 4200 dollars each: and I, who perhaps deserved least, had the most in right of my situation — which, however, is quite in unison with the general tenor of human affairs — my share being one entire eighth, viz. 2000*l.* or 8400 dollars. It was agreed among the parties concerned, that the bills should be sent to my bankers in London, with instructions to place the sums respectively to the credits of the individuals, according to the amounts endorsed on a paper accompanying them. I was glad of this arrangement, as it would secure a little something in England for those I wished well, and might prove an inducement to them — I mean Craig, the Doctor, and dear Mr. Rowley — to add something from time to time to the amount of this investment.

The great quantity of spars, and every kind of timber, and iron bolts, and canvass, and ropes, with a thousand other things, that had been recovered

from the wrecks of the Spanish ships, induced Allwood and some others to go to Jamaica, and bring back with them half a dozen ship carpenters; so that in a little time there were two fine vessels on the stocks, and one smaller one, and several boats. The smaller vessel was the speculation of Xavier and Derrick, who were much attached to each other, and in whose welfare I took a lively interest; the former, Diego's compeer — the latter, once my honest and faithful bondman.

In the course of this year, four negro men and four negro women, whom I had brought from Kingston in bondage seven years ago, were emancipated. It also occurred, that seventeen white families, amounting to fifty-three souls, arrived here in the Mary, from Bristol — driven from England by the pressure of the times incident to the severe winter of 1793-40, and which was still felt among the small farmers and peasantry, and many others. Every exertion was made to locate these people; and as many houses had been completed before their arrival, in the street crossing the woodland region, I found little difficulty in providing them with present habitations in the village. But, eventually, some of them were sent to German Town, and some to Allwood's Bay, to occupy allotments laid out for them, where buildings for their dwellings are now well advanced; it being intended that four families only, remain at St. George's.

Among the refugees there happened to be a man and his wife of the name of Simmonds, who had kept school in Worcestershire. I was happy in profiting by this circumstance, to release Mr.

Rowley from the fatigue he kindly had imposed on himself in teaching the children. I therefore set about erecting a house for the schoolmaster, adjoining the school at the further end of the isthmus; and soon placed him and his wife there, with an understanding that the people were now to pay for the education of their families, every one having become rich enough to do so.

In addition to these my country people, we also had a gradual accession of thirty-nine sailors to our strength; several individuals of the former crews, having married and fixed themselves on shore. Our vessels were constantly going or coming; and sometimes a stranger brought in and took away a cargo; so that activity and prosperity seemed to pervade the settlement, by increasing numbers and by increasing industry. The village, the while, was progressively extending, and the workmen getting on rapidly towards completing the church.

The May rains came heavily this year, and continued for nearly two weeks. In June several persons fell sick, and my beloved wife was among the number: she suffered a severe attack of remittent fever, from which she recovered slowly and imperfectly. There were some deaths; among whom we had to register Mrs. Margaret Reynolds and her child, and five individuals from among those lately arrived. But we had to lament the loss of our faithful and much loved Rota, whose death much affected both Lady Seaward and myself. Poor Diego took it much to heart: he never held up his head for many weeks after this painful event, but sat silently on the seat before his door, with his eyes fixed on

the ground. We all did our best to divert or console him under his affliction; but time only succeeded in doing so; little by little he came forth, gradually and almost imperceptibly resuming his former occupations.

Before the end of the year the church was finished; my uncle's brig having brought out 20,000 Welsh slates, with her other investments for the settlement, at the time the seventeen refugee families arrived. When the building was completed, the accounts were made up. It appeared there was a sum of 3450 dollars to be provided for, although the 2000 that remained of my share of the pirates' booty had been expended on it. I addressed the people on this subject after divine service, under the sacred canopy of the venerable tree, where we were now assembled for the last time.

After making the statement, I proposed that each male person should contribute according to his means. On which the boatswain of the Porghee stood forward, and spoke for the rest, saying — "Our people, sir, would like to have it said they built a church, and so we are ready to pay for it." I thanked him; but requested Mr. Reynolds to take a pencil, and a list of the adult male population, got ready for the occasion, and call us over by name, adding — "What shall I put down for you?" — I, Edward Seaward, stood first on the list—put down 1000 dollars; then followed Captain Seaward, 500; Captain Drake, 500; Mr. Van Kempen, 500; Doctor Gordon, 100; poor dear Mr. Rowley, 100; — and this subscription was followed up by a spirit and liberality in every in-

dividual, so great, that I was obliged to restrain many, who could not afford to give what they desired; no one offering less than 10 dollars. 4000 dollars were now subscribed, and the money paid down the next day. I thanked the people for their liberality, and especially the Porghee's crew, for their most generous offer, saying, I was quite satisfied with what they had done in a general way. I now stated to the assembly, that the church would be consecrated and opened on the following Sunday, by the name of St. George's Church, and that it would be expedient to provide comfortably for the minister. I therefore proposed, to that end, that every male person exceeding twenty years of age, should annually make him an offering of 3 dollars, and as much more as he might think fit, according to his circumstances, not exceeding 1 doubloon; the time for doing which, I thought, would be in the week immediately after Easter-day; and this annual offering was to be received in lieu of tithes, baptism, marriage, and burial fees. The people gave their assent, one by one, as their names were called over; which act was transferred to the Island Register. Mr. Rowley and myself now returned home, much pleased with the people and our success.

We observed Christmas-day this year with an important improvement. At nine o'clock all the boats in the settlement assembled at the landing place below Fort George, each having a flag in the bow. I then embarked in my barge, with the St. George's flag, and led the procession to Woodland Bay, where we landed precisely at the foot of

George Street, at the upper extremity of which the church is built. The tower, surmounted by a cross, (I hope my protestant brethren will take no offence,) directly faced us; the altar being to the east. As we left the beach, the newly made fountain, seen playing at the intersection of the streets, added much to the impression imparted by the view of our holy edifice. In a hot climate, water, pure water, may be esteemed an emblem even of heavenly enjoyment — and so it is represented both in our holy Scriptures and in the Alcoran. The people were all well dressed, and the procession advanced, the St. George's flag foremost. Every township or family, as might be, carrying the flag of their boat before them. I foresaw, in this institution, a splendid annual pageant, perfectly innocent, and likely to do much good, by exciting a spirit of honest emulation in making a fine appearance; and, in some measure, superseding the revels of former years, which I had found to be productive of some evil. However, they were not deprived of their amusements. The isthmean games were intended to be permanent: but no feast was given by me; justly alleging as a reason that the settlement had become too populous to continue it. Some, therefore, went home before the evening closed in, and some remained in the village, until the drum beat off at nine o'clock.

CHAP. XII.

BEFORE the year closed I began to think seriously of returning to England, as my beloved wife did not regain either her strength or her spirits. Besides, I could evidently perceive she no longer desired that we should remain here. Sometimes she would say — "The child is grown up; we may now leave it to itself:" sometimes — "I think, dear Edward, you may confide the government of the settlement safely to Captain Drake:" and sometimes, when her spirits were very low, she would say — "Let us go home to Hartland, Edward, and finish our days in peace; there is now nothing here but bustle and anxiety." These and corresponding considerations induced me to make up my mind for quitting the colony early in February of next year, and leave Drake my lieutenant-governor and captain-commandant.

With this object in view, various arrangements were entered on. The first, and perhaps not least important of which, was to have a clear settlement in money matters with every person on the island. This in some cases was extremely perplexing; and most frequently I was under the necessity of conceding much, both in bondsmen's labour, timber, provisions, and other matters, before I could close the account at all to the satisfaction of the opposite party; thus generally making a considerable sacri-

fice. But this state of things arose out of our peculiar situation: I was always doing something for the advancement of the settlement; taking my chance of being at the whole expense, or of receiving a partial remuneration in some way or other at a future time. I, therefore, in settling with many persons, gave up large portions of my right. However, before the 31st of December, balances were struck and paid, and receipts passed, between myself and every individual on the island.

In looking into public affairs, I was happy to find at the expiration of the year, (the salaries and other charges on our revenue being paid up,) that the sum of 2520 dollars remained in the hands of the fiscal. In consequence of this easy state of our finances, and taking into consideration the prosperous condition of our trade and the riches of the people, I issued a warrant, by which "the clergyman should still receive his 50*l.* a year, beside the Easter offering; and that Doctor Gordon might be at liberty to charge moderately for his medicine and attendance, in addition to his salary, still receiving as heretofore his pay as fiscal; also that Town Major, Lieutenant, and Adjutant Craig should have 1 dollar *per diem*, as pay in full for all his offices; and that M'Nabb, Andrews, and Finlayson, (Lieutenant Craig's former comrades,) should have a halberd each, with $2\frac{1}{2}$ pistarines, viz. 5 ryals, as their daily pay: the artillerymen to have their island pay continued for one year more; their sergeant's, permanently: and labourer's wages, viz. 2 ryals a day, to be paid to the negro canoe-man at Pirates' Fort, now Frazer's

Fort;" which name it received after the defeat of the Spaniards, in honour of the skilful engineer, to whose good advice, under Heaven, we owed the preservation of the island on that occasion.

I now turned my attention to my own revenues, beginning with my cotton plantation at Long Bay; which yielded so well that I received an offer of 300 dollars a year from the settlers at Pirates' Land, for its produce, which I accepted. I next let Eastfield to Gortz, with all the sheep thereon, viz. 220, at a rent of 440 dollars a year; he being required to keep the same number of sheep always on that place, and the adjoining hills. The turtle fisheries were let to Rock and Stone, at 500 dollars a year: and it appeared that I was likely to get a handsome revenue by Vicente, the Panama pearl-diver; who already had taken some very large oysters from the rocks in deep water, affording a few fine pearls, specimens of what we might expect: of the produce of this fishery I laid claim to one third. These rents, and some others of less value, I placed at the disposal of Captain Drake, to be expended, if absolutely required, in the public service; but to be remitted to me if he could get on without them.

1744. — The annual tempest passed away this season with little more evidence of its presence than an abundance of rain. We often reflected during this period on the kind providence of our God, who had so ordered all things, that it was not now the Spaniards should come to destroy us. After the rains ceased, and the weather became settled, I proposed to my dear Eliza, for us to

visit every individual settler on the islands leisurely, day after day, to ascertain their condition ere we bade them farewell. We did this; and had ample reason to be gratified by observing the cleanliness, satisfaction, and abundance, that every where appeared.

The month of February arrived. I now arranged definitely with my friend Drake, as to the terms on which he was to assume the government. I desired that he should occupy the mansion as I had done, and give up his house and grounds to Mr. Rowley; appointing his senior officer to the ordinary command of the yacht. "There is a fine herd of deer in the Woodland Park, my dear friend," said I; "*we* have not as yet tasted the venison: but I do not desire you to abstain from doing so; only, preserve the breed. I will endeavour to take two pairs of them with me to Hartland."

When my dear wife talked to Rosalie about making preparations for departure, she simpered and hesitated; and after a little more nonsense, acknowledged that she had engaged herself in marriage to Mr. Reynolds. On the matter being mentioned to me, I sent for him, and he avowed the truth. "Well, sir," I said, "it may be indelicate in me to press the matter, as you have not lost your wife quite twelve months; but I must either take Miss Filibert back with us, or leave her here your wife. In short, unless she is your wife before we sail, I must take her along with us." He answered respectfully, he would speak to the lady on the subject, and let me know. Much time

was not required to settle the business; so on that day week Mr. Rowley tied the indissoluble knot. Reynolds had been steady, and had made some money; besides, he had received gracious letters from his father, to whose estate he was heir. I therefore could make no objection to the match on behalf of Rosalie. When settling the business of the nuptials, he offered to pay me a moiety of his bond; but I desired him to defer it another year, as otherwise he might cramp his means of trade. On the day of the marriage, Lady Seaward gave the bride 500 dollars, as a compensation for her services during the seven years she had been with us; and she afterwards added to this, some little valuables, as a mark of her esteem.

One morning, just as we came into the hall to breakfast, Diego, who had been anxiously standing there to see us, put the palm of his hand upon his head, looking at us with an unusual vacancy, like one bereaved of hope. He said — "Lady mine, and honoured master, I hear, soon you leave us. Diego then glad, for go rest with Rota." My Eliza did not give me time to answer him; — "We will never leave you, nor forsake you, faithful Diego," she replied: "if you will choose to go with us, our home shall be your home; but England is a cold climate." Diego looked at me. "Come with us to England, Master Diego," said I, "and I will do all in my power to make you comfortable." — "Thank you, Sir Edward! thank you too, my Lady!" exclaimed Diego: then lowering his voice, he said — "Rota loved my Lady;"

and then the old man wept — "but Rota," continued he, "is gone to Heaven, and Diego will go any where with his kind lady, and Master Sir Edward."

When it was known that Mademoiselle was to be married, there were many persons, both black and white, desirous of accompanying my wife to England as her maid; but she declined taking any one. Having expressed her opinion to me, that a female attendant, unaccustomed to be at sea, was worse than useless on board ship, and that on her arrival in England any woman brought from the settlement would only be an incumbrance; "I think you are right, dear," I replied; "besides, women are already rather deficient here in numbers, and it would not be well, unnecessarily, to take even one away."

A few days before the time fixed on for our departure, Mr. Rowley gave me 1500 dollars, which he had saved since his arrival in the island; being nearly the amount of his entire salary for the whole period: but he had received some gifts, and had not been at any expense worth mentioning. He requested me to send the dollars to my banker in London; and desire him to invest the amount thereof, together with the 500*l.*, his interest in the large government bill, in such public securities as might be deemed advisable. I met his request with much pleasure; and was most happy in seeing this little investment likely to be made, as a something in reserve for himself or family.

On the same day Doctor Gordon called on me with a similar request, but propounded in a very

different manner;—"He would like to send some money to England, to be invested in the public funds, if I would see the business done at an advantageous time, so as not to lose the possibility of a fall by any inconsiderate precipitancy." He then went into the merits and demerits of the different stocks; about which he had a great deal to say, having seen "The Chronicle" lately sent out to us; making so many *pros*, and *cons*, and *contras*, about the determinate mode of investing the money, that, notwithstanding the great respect I entertained for him, I felt myself obliged to decline having any thing to do with it. "Well, then, Sir Edward," he said, "if you will not meddle with the money,—and here it is in four bags, out by, in the piazza, just 3000 dollars, and 1000 pieces of eight,—I suppose you will have no objection to my putting it into business here, if I like."—"O, none at all," I replied. "Well," he rejoined, "I'll see about it;" moving away at the same time to the great door, where his man, William Wallace, stood guarding the bags. "Give me twa o' the bags, Wully," said he, "and you tak the other twa; so we'll e'en go back we' them again." Finding that Wallace was there, I took the opportunity of reminding the Doctor, in the presence of his bondman, that this was the year of his jubilee. "I know that right well, sir," he replied, a little testily; "but I think the man may choose to stay where he is just, if he knows when he is well off." Saying this, he departed with his bags under his arms, followed by William Wallace similarly laden; evidently not in very good humour, but talking to the fellow in

broad Scotch, which he always did: and to say the truth, he had taught his man Wully to speak so much like himself, that if it were not for his colour, you might mistake him for a descendant of the patriot whose name he bore.

Before my departure, I had several conferences with Van Kempen; the chief object of which was, to know how the additional vessels now building could find employment. He said, "if there were to be as many more, they could be employed; there was scarcely any bounds to the trade of an *entrepôt.*"—"Then tell me, Mr. Van Kempen," asked I, "what is required of me, towards fostering this commerce?"—"In ordinary cases," he replied, "it might be necessary to take off the *ad valorem* duty; but where the profits are so large, and the facilities of trade so great, it will not be felt."—"Then, is there any thing whatever for me to do?" I rejoined. "Yes; to let us alone!" he replied, significantly: "that is all we require of the Governor." I allowed this reply to be conclusive; believing I saw in it the secret of that commercial ascendancy, which, at different times, had obtained in places of not much greater territorial extent than Seaward Islands.

My brother and his wife saw us often, both at their own house and at the mansion, ever since I had made up my mind to return to England. At one time, they had some thoughts of accompanying us; and my brother said he certainly would have done so, "but the loss of the Tom Cod was 3000*l.* out of his pocket; yet as soon as he could make up that loss, and perhaps realise a very little more, he

assuredly would retire from business, as he had now got together nearly 20,000*l.*" Mrs. Seaward, of late, evinced more feeling and affection for her sister, than I had before witnessed in her; but my sister Maria (Mrs. Drake), not only now, but on all occasions, was the kindest and most affectionate of friends. Mr. and Mrs. Rowley, too, were ever ready to cheer or amuse her. But it was on me she leaned for every earthly comfort. "You are all to me, dear Edward," she would say—"you are all I desire on earth, to solace or to cheer me."

A few days before I sailed, Drake and I were closeted all the forenoon, making final arrangements. We wrote out a memorial, from him, to the Lords Commissioners of the Admiralty, and another to the King; setting forth what he had done for his Majesty's service, at Porto Bello, and in the capture of vessels of superior force, and in the defence of these islands; praying for a promotion in the navy, to the rank of Master and Commander. The memorial to the King was not to be presented, unless the other should fail in its object. He then received from my hand an outline of our laws, or rather regulations; also a body of instructions for his conduct in all public matters, conceived and written down rather in the spirit than in the letter of what I should require. I then gave him some memoranda as to my private interests in the island; especially with respect to the timber, which was not to be cut down without leave, and then to be paid for, at a valuation, by those who wanted it. I then presented to him his commission as Lieu-

tenant-Governor, and Captain-Commandant of Seaward Islands.

On this day all our friends dined with us; and, before they took their leave, all of them confided to my care numerous letters for England. Among the rest, Doctor Gordon, having "thought about it," pulled a large packet from his waistcoat pocket, saying—"Sir Edward, I know I am a little *fasheous;* but I hope you will not impute it to any disrespectful intention to yourself, who I am free to acknowledge to be a most honourable and trustworthy man. And so, to make a long business short, if you will just be good enough to take charge of this letter for your bankers in London, with my four bags of money—which I will duly send you to-morrow morning, and which have been sealed, and nailed up in a double case, in the presence of Mr. Van Kempen—I cannot but say, you will lay me under a great obligation." I held out my hand to receive the packet; then taking a part of the Doctor's speech for the greater part of my reply, I said—"*To make a long business short*, I will do it." The Doctor seemed now as much pleased, as he had been otherwise on the former occasion. And it afforded me no less pleasure, to think I should, by this act, not leave an unpleasant feeling behind me in the breast of this eccentric, but truly honest man.

Drake employed our few remaining days in making accommodation for the deer, and a large supply of sea stock for our ultimate voyage, to be put on board the schooner; all the other things we intended to take with us, being packed and

ready. On Saturday afternoon the whole was embarked.

On Sunday, the 12th of February, after coming out of church, we took a general and affectionate leave of all the people; myself addressing a few parting words, I may say, of parental exhortation to them; which were answered by the tears of many, and bows of reverence from all. My dear wife wept too; and as she passed, every lip blessed her: sobs now became audible around us: then waving my hand kindly to them, I pulled my hat over my own eyes, and hastened forward. Early the next morning, our household were all assembled in the hall: we distributed some appropriate presents among them; and then we tenderly kissed the children. Our nearest and dearest friends next appeared; and accompanied by them, and attended by Diego, we left the mansion. Eliza leaned on my arm, and grasped it hard as we walked along. She looked down, with an agitated colour on her cheek; but a sweet smile was on her mouth, which told me, though she felt a natural emotion at quitting the place—perhaps for ever—yet happiness was in her heart. Diego carried Fidele in his arms; the dear little animal having grown too fat, in his old age, to run beside us. When arrived at the shore, we bade an affectionate but firm adieu to the attached friends and relations we were about to leave behind us, and embarked without any difficulty. The beach was lined with our late servants, and the people, standing at various distances in groups, to see the last of us.

In compliment to me and to our islands, Drake hoisted the St. George's flag at the fore; and all

the boats of the settlement, with their flags flying, escorted us out of the harbour. When fairly out, we set our top-gallant-sails, and hauled down our colours, which was the signal for the boats to return; they did so, but without a cheer. Their silence was a better compliment; it evinced their sorrowful feeling on the occasion.

When our vessel had proceeded some distance, and the islands had receded far, my beloved looked steadily and mournfully on the shadowy land;—"Farewell!" she said, and sighed deeply. "You sigh, love," I exclaimed: "we leave the people rich and happy; and our dear friend here," alluding to Drake, "will take good care of them."—"It was the recollection of former days," she replied, "that drew forth that sigh—the recollection of the time when that land was to me an earthly paradise."

On the fifth day we came in sight of Port Royal, just as a convoy for England, with three ships of war, were standing out of the harbour. Drake instantly suspected what they were; and after conferring with me for a few minutes, made a whiff in his ensign; the signal to speak the Commodore, who was distinguished by a broad pendant. On the signal being answered, the Porghee ran up on his quarter. Drake then hailed him—"This is Sir Edward Seaward's yacht. He is on board, and on his way to Kingston, to take a passage in a merchant ship to England." The Commodore very politely hove to, and sent a boat on board, offering me a passage in his ship; at the same time informing me that the fleet would anchor in Blue Fields Bay, at the west end of the island, and remain

there a few days. I returned the Commodore my best thanks, saying, "In that case, we would keep company with the convoy; and I would, on arriving at Blue Fields, be able to make further arrangements."

It was a fine sight, to see so many ships together. We ran down before the wind, between the Pedro Shoals and the land; and next day came to in Blue Fields Bay. As soon as the fleet anchored, I went with Drake to pay my respects to the Commodore, who, on meeting me, cordially repeated his invitation; which I politely declined, on account of the delicate state of Lady Seaward's health. Before evening, Drake contrived to secure a passage for me in the Severn, one of the finest ships out of Bristol; and before night he had put all our packages on board, which were numerous, large, and heavy. He agreeably surprised the Captain, with our good supply of sheep and poultry, and other sea stores: but there was some demur about taking the deer; which at last he consented to do; contriving a place for them in the long-boat on deck. Diego bought some fine fresh shaddocks, and other fruits, on shore, while these matters were transacting; also some provender for the sheep and deer.

As I wished the Porghee to return as quickly as possible to Seaward Islands, I explained our situation to the Commodore; to whom, as Drake's commanding officer, the compliment was due. And on the following day our inestimable friend bade my dear wife and myself an affectionate adieu: shaking Master Diego cordially by the hand, and not forgetting to say—"Good b'ye, Fidele!" he left

us on board the Severn; and with an emotion not to be described, we saw our dear little vessel fill her sails and go.

On the next day the whole fleet got under weigh, steering to the westward. Our faithful Diego had already shown how useful he would prove to us, by the care he had taken to see all our packages stowed away, and those we might want placed in our state room. My dear wife and myself thought it would be expedient, now, to call him by the English equivalent for Diego, viz. James, to prevent the possibility of his Spanish name exposing him to jests or even affronts; and we took the earliest opportunity of imparting this to him. He had sense enough to comprehend the matter, and expressed himself obliged by our forethought. "Then, Master Sir Edward," said he, "if you please, my name is Diego James."—"Just so, Master Diego," I replied; "but Mr. James for the mouths of strangers."—"And for their ears too," added my considerate Eliza, "when we speak of you to them." It was not our intention to treat this worthy man as a menial, although he was quite disposed to do all that could be required of one; therefore I stipulated that he should mess with the second-mate, and I allowed him a supply from my own sea stores and stock, to make him a welcome messmate.

The breeze was steady, and the weather continued fine, until we got into the Gulf of Florida. It then became hazy, and even foggy, which made it not only disagreeable but dangerous; the convoy being obliged to keep close together for fear of the

Spanish cruizers, or row-boats, cutting off vessels, as they always do from a straggling fleet. Yet, in spite of this caution, one or two of our merchantmen were taken; the men-of-war being kept constantly on the alert, every now and then having a brush with the enemy.

After clearing the Gulf, and passing Cape Canaveral, the fleet * * * * * *

The Editor has to lament, that, from this point, seventy-three pages of the original manuscript are missing; that is, from page 630. to page 704. in the old MS. Only four subsequent pages have been found; and they appear to have been intended to close the Journal. It seems so, not only from the numbering figures on the pages, but from the dates of the years, which uniformly are added at the top of every page. The 704th page is headed 1749; and bears so satisfactorily on the former most interesting subjects of the narrative, that the Editor ventures to hope the additional Chapter will prevent any actual disappointment in the reader's mind, concerning the safe arrival of the homeward bound party in England; and it also shows their subsequent happy domestic residence at Sir Edward's seat in Gloucestershire, from the year of his return—namely, 1744—until his being called to London on public business, five years after—that is, in the year 1749—when the narrative here recommences, and finishes with the fate of Seaward Islands.

LAST CHAPTER.

"It will answer no good purpose, sir," he replied; "but the contrary. Mr. Pelham has been perfectly explicit, and I can have nothing more to say on the subject."—"It is not my wish, my Lord Duke," I observed, "to create any unnecessary vexation to his Majesty's government; but I have a duty to perform in another quarter. I cannot suffer the people to be treated in this manner, abandoned like dogs, without seeking that redress to which they are entitled; and I do feel that it is my duty to have this business brought before parliament, if we are to be thus sacrificed."—"I tell you, Sir Edward Seaward," he replied, "that the thing is done. Mr. Pelham has already told you so. Those islands, or rocks, or whatever they are, must be delivered up immediately to the crown of Spain."

On hearing this, I determined to make one effort more, to impress his Grace with the importance of my request. "The court of Spain, my Lord Duke," said I, "knows the importance of the place, though perhaps you may not. During the war, the commanders both at Carthagena and Porto Bello were ordered to take those islands, and they tried to do so; but we defeated their first expedition,—some of their ships being captured, some destroyed, and those that escaped were roughly handled. The next expedition, which was sufficiently formidable

to attack the best of our West India Islands, suffered shipwreck on our shores; and with their remains we built vessels, and pursued a lucrative commerce already established. Whether we contemplate Seaward Islands in a naval or commercial point of view, they are of no small importance; and the Spaniard knows it. The place is close to the track of his homeward bound galleons. It is an *entrepôt* by which his sullen commercial policy is neutralised: flags of all nations, including his own, resort there. Our merchants dispense millions of the produce of British industry and commerce, from that spot, to foreigners; they have sent their gains to England, — much of which, perhaps one hundred thousand pounds altogether, derived from those islands, has been vested in the public funds. Messrs. Perry and Co., sir," continued I, "can vouch for the truth of this last statement." The Duke bit his lip; but not speaking, I went on. "But there is another point, sir; — the claims of the people. They have made the place what it is. It is respectably fortified: it never cost the English government one shilling to do it. Can you tell me, my Lord Duke, where I can find another spot under the crown that can put in the same claim? They have brought the land into a garden-like cultivation; they have built a little town, with a fine church in it; they are formed into a community; and they are ready to defend themselves against all invaders. Leave us to ourselves, my Lord Duke; do not interfere. Say that you will not interfere, and I will go and raise one thousand men, at my own expense, and I will put the Spaniard at defiance."

All the compliment I can pay to the Duke on the occasion is, that he kept silence while I spoke, and that he changed colour two or three times while I made this strong appeal; but it ended in his cool reply — "Sir Edward Seaward, I tell you again the thing is done, and the place must forthwith be delivered up to the Crown of Spain. There will be 10,000*l.* forthcoming for your indemnification, as I told you before; and that is 8000*l.* more than we dare charge on the business. Why will you be so troublesome? — the Island of Rattan has been already given up, and every other place, agreeable to the convention, excepting these abominable rocks of yours." — "This being your determination, my Lord Duke," I replied, "with your permission I take my leave." He rose and bowed: I took my hat, bowing in return, but as a cavalier would do when he would give his antagonist to understand — "Sir, we meet again."

After I left the Secretary of State, my mind was so absent from the present, that I saw nothing in passing until I arrived at my lodgings in Bruton-street. My ever dear and affectionate wife anxiously awaited my return. In a moment she read in my countenance that things still went on counter. She did not speak to me, but led me to a chair and sat down by me, still holding my hand in hers. In less than a minute she arose; taking her cambric pocket-handkerchief from her pocket, and seating herself on my knee, began to rub my forehead; and having done this a little while, during which I found my blood circulate more freely, she kissed both my eyes, one after the other, saying — "My dear Ed-

ward, if it were in your Eliza's power to make you happy in all things, you should not thus suffer." — "O, my love, it is too much," I replied, "to see our people treated like dogs, and turned over to the Spaniards, without security or even stipulation." — "Yes, my honoured husband," she softly answered, "it is indeed grievous; and I am not surprised to see you thus oppressed, and even indignant; but, my dear Edward," continued she, pressing my hand, "let us look at the foundation of your grief in detail. I admit that, taking it altogether, it cannot do otherwise than vex and distress you; but let us examine it more closely. As to the loss the Crown may sustain in giving up the place, that is their business, my Edward: as to the loss you yourself will suffer, I am sure you care nothing about it. Now, as to the people; your brother is in England with his family; Drake is rich, and I should think would be happy to retire from a situation now full of anxiety; Van Kempen, you know, has said in a late letter, he intended to go to Amsterdam; Doctor Gordon has saved plenty of money; Mr. Rowley has remitted a good deal; Mr. Reynolds has returned to England to enjoy his paternal estate; all the new merchants are personal strangers to us; and as to the other people, those whom you found slaves, you ultimately made free; and every one who came there under your auspices is rich in money, even if the government should persist in taking from them their lands and place of habitation. All these people, my dear Edward," continued she, "are in a condition to shift for themselves; and not one of them, I believe, will grieve half so much at the

change that is awaiting them, as you now are doing for their sakes. The time was, when I would have grieved with you,—when the settlement was our nursing child; but that is no longer the case; every one is wealthy, and if scattered abroad they are as able to take care of themselves as we are. They have not that attachment to the place that you have; they will soon find another home, and be satisfied. Drake will return, with his dear wife and family; most likely Mr. Rowley will come to England also; poor dear Rota is no more; Diego is with us; Xavier and his family, wherever they go, will make it out very well." Then putting her arms round my neck, she finished by saying — "Besides, it is God's will, my dear Edward, in the dispensations of his providence, that our islands should again become a desert;"—as she said this she wept;—"and it is his will," continued she, "I hope, that we shall be resigned; and your own Eliza will endeavour to be your earthly paradise."

I was overpowered and confounded; her kindness overpowered me, her reasonings confounded me; but it was always in this way that my guardian angel delivered me from perplexity and vexation.

My perturbed mind, and agitated feelings, soon felt the smoothing influence of my Eliza's consolations, which, like oil cast upon the sea, breaks the power of the wind that would stir it into surge and billows. Thus softened down, and while enjoying something like a return of holy peace within, I had a visit from the Earl of Harrington. He smiled as he shook hands with me, and as usual said some fine things to Lady Seaward; but I perceived he

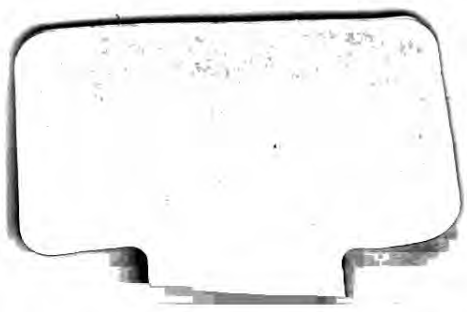
was not quite at ease. In a few minutes he said — "My dear Sir Edward, I have called on you, as your friend, to advise you to make the best you can of it with the minister; conceding the point. The fact is, the government is pledged to the Crown of Spain to deliver up the islands; and it must be done. I have even spoken to the King on the subject; but, I am sorry to say, he showed some displeasure at my interference. 'Tell Sir Edward Seaward,' said his Majesty, 'the place must be given up immediately; and he may consider it a mark of favour to himself, that I prevent his deputy-governor, Captain Drake, from being brought to a court martial, for resisting the authorities that have been sent to take possession of it for the King of Spain.'" — "Indeed, I am sorry," returned I, "the King has been brought to see the case in this light; but I will be guided by you, my Lord. I have pointed out the situation and value of the place to his Majesty's ministers, and yet they persist in their decision: however, I am not surprised that men, who did not know that Cape Breton was an island, should be so ignorant as to think that Seaward Islands lay off the harbour of Porto Bello. But the thing is done, I am told, and I must submit; will you, therefore, my dear friend, see the minister, and tell him that I submit to the order of government, but that I expect he will appoint a commissioner to carry the business into execution, and that he will order him to confer with me on its details? My only wish now is, that the people should be removed with that degree of consideration which is due to the sacrifice they are called upon to make for

the honour of those who signed or ratified the treaty that expels them. I expect that a settlement will be obtained for such as may choose to go to the Mosquito shore, on the terms proposed to me by Mr. Pelham. Likewise say, that I shall accept the 10,000*l.* offered to me, which I will place at the disposal of Captain Drake, for the necessities of the people; and after that, if there should remain any part of it unappropriated, I will receive it as a small compensation for all the money I have laid out in making those islands what they are." — "I think this will be acceded to, Sir Edward," replied Lord Harrington; then, after a little explanatory conversation, he took his leave.

On the morrow, Mr. Pitts, who had been Governor of Rattan, waited on me from the minister, with full powers to arrange every thing for the evacuation of Seaward Islands. The forts were to be demolished, and the place then given up. Such, he said, had been the fate of Rattan, after the government had expended 15,000*l.* on its establishment. Mr. Pitts was a liberal and kind-hearted man, entering warmly into my feelings. He had been much among the Mosquito-shore Indians, and cordially undertook to procure a good settlement among them for the Seaward Island colony. We met three successive days, occupied entirely in completing our arrangements: by which it was stipulated, that the people should have three months to remove from the islands with their stock and goods, and that government should pay the island vessels for transporting them; that government should satisfy the Indians for six square miles of land, such as

might be fixed on for their residence; and also grant a commission of Superintendent to Lieutenant James Craig, with a subaltern's pay as such. All this being ratified, I sat down and wrote a long letter to my dear and inestimable friend, Captain Drake, with all necessary details. Mr. Pitts received my letter, and last instructions, with much feeling and great courtesy; he saw the struggle in my breast when I gave it to him. He took his leave, and posted off for Plymouth, to sail instantly for the islands in a sloop of war. Our business in London being thus brought to a close,

"Now, my own Edward," said my beloved Eliza, "let us return to Hartland, and finish our days in peace."

THE END.

LONDON:
Printed by A. & R. Spottiswoode,
New-Street-Square.